1	IN THE CIRCUIT COURT OF THE STATE OF OREGON
2	FOR THE COUNTY OF MULTNOMAH
3	
4	
5	
6	GRAND JURY No. 3 PROCEEDINGS
7	Case No. 102
8	Conducted by:
9	Todd Jackson, Deputy District Attorney
10	
11	
12	May 31, 2019
13	
14	(5:06:14)
15	
16	DA Case Nos. 2403060-1 and 2403060-2
17	PPB Cse No. 19-138195
18	
19	
20	
21	Katie Bradford, CSR 90-0148
22	Court Reporter Portland, Oregon (502) 267 5112
23	(503) 267-5112
24	Proceedings recorded on digital audio recording;
25	transcript provided by Certified Shorthand Reporter.

Index

1	GENERAL INDEX	
2	VOLUME 1	
3		Page No.
4	May 31, 2019 Proceedings	3
5	Case Called	3
6	Examination of Travis Law	4
7	Examination of Brian J. Hughes	61
8	Examination of	76
9	Examination of Derrick Vincent Rogers	118
LO	AFTERNOON SESSION	144
L1	Examination of Delbert Littlejohn	144
L2	Examination of Lana Eide	176
L3	Examination of Betty Lou Littlejohn	191
L4	Examination of Jon L. Brock	203
L5	Examination of Aaron Rizzo	210
L6	Examination of Andrew Young	265
L7	Examination of Sarah Burns	291
L8	Reporter's Certificate	309
L9	* * *	
20		
21		
22		
23		
24		

- 1 Death Investigation
- 2 Deceased: Jeb Collin Brock
- 3 Incident Date: 4-29-19
- 4 Incident Location:
- 5 Portland, Oregon
- 6 DA Case Nos. 2403060-1 and 2403060-2
- 7 PPB Cse No. 19-138195
- 8 Grand Jury No. 3, Case No. 102
- 9 * * *
- 10 (Volume 1, Friday, May 31, 2019, 10:31 a.m.)
- 11 PROCEEDINGS
- 12 (Whereupon, the following proceedings were
- held before Grand Jury No. 3:)
- 14 MR. JACKSON: Okay. This is Deputy District
- 15 Attorney Todd Jackson appearing before Grand Jury
- No. 3. This is Grand Jury Case No. 102. This is DA
- 17 Case No. 2403060-1 and -2, a death investigation
- 18 following the use of firearms by police which caused
- 19 the death of Mr. Jeb Brock on April 29th, 2019 in the
- 20 City of Portland.
- 21 The first witness to be called before the
- 22 grand jury is Detective Travis Law.
- Can you please raise your right hand?
- 24 TRAVIS LAW
- 25 Was thereupon called as a witness; and, having been

1	first	duly	sworn,	was	examined	and	testified	as	follows:
2			A GRAI	JU DI	JROR: Tha	anks.			

- 3 EXAMINATION
- 4 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 5 Q You can have a seat.
- 6 Could you please state and spell your name.
- 7 A Travis Law, T-r-a-v-i-s, L-a-w.
- 8 Q What is your current occupation?
- 9 A I am a detective with the Portland Police
- 10 Bureau currently assigned to the homicide detail.
- 11 Q And how long have you been a police officer?
- 12 A Over 16 years.
- 13 Q And have you assisted in the investigation
- of the use of deadly force by police officers in
- 15 the past?
- 16 A I have, yes, on several occasions.
- 17 Q And also, as a member of the homicide
- 18 detail, have you investigated other homicide cases?
- 19 A I have, yes.
- 20 Q Okay. Did you receive any special training
- in the areas of homicide investigations and
- officer-involved shooting's?
- 23 A Yes. During my 80-hour detectives academy
- 24 before becoming a detective, we receive training in
- 25 those areas.

5

1	Q	Okay.	Could you	ı please	explair	for	us how
2	officer-	involved	shooting	investi	gations	are	conducted
3	through	the Porti	land Polic	ce Bureau	u?		

- A Yes. Officers receive training regarding officer-involved shootings. That includes that when an officer-involved shooting occurs, they secure the scene.
- They separate -- identify and separate

 witnesses and they also identify involved officers and

 they make sure that someone is assigned to monitor

 those involved officers. And those involved officers

 are separated. There's also a series of notifications

 that are made, to include the homicide detail, who's

 responsible for the investigation.
 - Q When you talk about witnesses, does that include both civilian witnesses who may have seen an incident occur and also other police officers that were not involved in the use of force, but may have witnessed it or seen part or all of it?
- 20 A That is correct.

5

7

15

16

17

18

- Q Whose primary responsibility is it to
 actually separate those -- or identify the witness
 officers and involved officers and then separate
 them out?
- 25 A The on-scene commander or the person in

- 1 charge of the scene will make sure that the -- that is
- 2 done.
- 3 Q Is the Portland Police homicide detail
- 4 always called out to conduct the investigation into an
- 5 officer-involved shooting in Portland?
- 6 A Yes.
- 7 O Okay. When there is a homicide call out for
- 8 an officer-involved shooting, what does that entail?
- 9 A We have a team -- a team of detectives that
- 10 respond to the scene. We are notified all hours of
- 11 the day and night. We respond along with the Forensic
- 12 Evidence Division, which are criminalists or crime
- scene technicians. And we also are assisted by the
- 14 Medical Examiner's Office.
- 15 Q Okay. Does a member of the District
- 16 Attorney's Office also respond to the scene?
- 17 A That is correct.
- 18 Q Okay.
- 19 A And earlier, I said, I think, an on-scene
- 20 commander. What I meant to say is the officer in
- 21 charge. It may not be a -- a command-level person.
- 22 It could be a sergeant or a lieutenant at the scene
- 23 who's -- the officer in charge is just also referred
- to as the OIC.
- Q Okay. And are those officers generally

- 1 patrol officers or sergeants that have responded to
- 2 the initial call?
- 3 A Yes. And they are usually not directly
- 4 involved in the incident. They sort of have a view
- 5 from -- from back of the incident and the scene.
- 6 Q Okay. And then once the homicide detail
- 7 arrives on scene, do you assume control of the
- 8 investigation?
- 9 A Yes, we do.
- 10 Q And so how -- how are tasks assigned once
- 11 the homicide detail is on scene?
- 12 A Well, initially, we secure -- make sure that
- 13 the -- the scene is secure and then we -- that there
- 14 are assignments that are given by the supervisor of
- 15 the -- of the detail.
- 16 Q Is that a sergeant?
- 17 A Yes. And in this case, it was Sergeant
- 18 Michele Hughes.
- 19 Q Okay.
- 20 A And we also assume control of the
- investigation from that point forward. And we
- 22 basically -- it changes hands from the patrol officers
- and sergeants at the scene to the homicide detail.
- 24 Q So were you called out to investigate an
- officer-involved shooting on April 29th, 2019?

1	A I was. I was notified at 5:07 a.m. on
2	April 29th, which was a Monday. My sergeant, Michele
3	Hughes, contacted me that morning and directed me to
4	respond to that address, on
5	Q In Southeast Portland?
6	A Correct.
7	Q Okay. Who else responded with you?
8	A My partner, Detective Vince Cui; other
9	members of the homicide detail; the Forensic Evidence
10	Division; command staff from the Portland Police
11	Bureau; yourself, Todd Jackson, from the DA's Office.
12	Q Okay. And was Detective Sergeant Michele
13	Hughes also there present at the scene?
14	A She was. And I was assigned as a lead
15	detective for that for this investigation.
16	Q Okay. When you're assigned as the lead
17	detective for an investigation, what does that
18	essentially mean?
19	A I'm responsible for the the investigation
20	at the scene and then the follow-up investigation in
21	the days and weeks afterwards.
22	Q Okay. Could you take us through what you
23	did when you got on scene for this case?
24	A Yes. After meeting with Sergeant Hughes,
25	Michele Hughes, at the scene, we, ultimately, received

1 a briefing from the officer in charge, w	who, in this
--	--------------

- 2 case, was Sergeant Brian Hughes.
- 3 But before the briefing, we verified that
- 4 the scene was set up appropriately. We made sure that
- 5 the involved officers were separated and that there
- 6 was someone assigned to monitor them. And then we
- 7 received a briefing as a team in the mobile command
- 8
- 9 Q Okay. Were the witness officers also
- separated and monitored?
- 11 A Yes, that is correct.
- 12 Q And when you say you wanted to ensure that
- the crime scene was set up appropriately, what does
- 14 that mean?
- 15 A That there isn't unauthorized people coming
- in and out of the crime scene and also that it's large
- 17 enough that we have an area large enough to -- to
- 18 capture the scene.
- 19 Q And do you actually exclude people from the
- 20 scene by putting up crime scene tape around a
- 21 particular area?
- 22 A That is correct, yes.
- 23 O So --
- 24 A And there's officers posted at thoroughfare
- 25 points of -- of entry where people could drive in or

- walk up, there's officers posted to restrict access.
- 2 Q Is there also what's referred to as a crime
- 3 scene log kept to document everybody or every single
- 4 person that enters the crime scene?
- 5 A Yes. We have an outer crime scene and an
- 6 inner crime scene. The outer crime scene is the area
- where we sort of operate, where we can operate without
- 8 disturbing any of the evidence at the scene.
- 9 The inner crime scene is where the person
- 10 with the crime scene log is situated. And they make
- 11 sure that no one comes in or out, and that those that
- do enter are documented.
- 13 Q Okay. Once you received those briefings,
- 14 what was the next thing that you did in the
- 15 investigation?
- 16 A We did a weapons countdown with the involved
- officers. That's part of our role at the scene, is to
- 18 determine or document the officers' weapons. That was
- one of the things that we did.
- 20 Q Okay. And as part of the process, were
- 21 communication restriction orders placed on the
- 22 involved officers and witness officers?
- 23 A Yes, they were.
- 24 O And what does that mean?
- 25 A It is an administrative function of the

- 1 Police Bureau where they issue the involved officers
- an -- orders, and in writing, to the -- where they're
- 3 not allowed to discuss the case with only certain
- 4 people.
- 5 Q Okay. Do you know who those people are that
- 6 they're authorized to discuss with?
- 7 A I believe it's their -- their spouse, their
- 8 clergy and maybe a few other people.
- 9 Q Okay. But they're not --
- 10 A Their --
- 12 A Their -- the employee assistance people --
- 13 O Union folks?
- 14 A -- union folks, mental health
- 15 representatives, something -- something to that
- 16 effect.
- Q Okay. But they're, essentially, not allowed
- to walk around and discuss with other officers or
- 19 friends what has happened?
- 20 A That is correct. And there are -- there are
- 21 penalties for violating the communication restriction
- order.
- 23 Q And were those placed on the involved and
- 24 witness officers in this case?
- 25 A They were, yes.

- 1 Q Okay. So what is your understanding of the
- 2 name of the person that was shot and killed by the
- 3 police in this case was?
- 4 A Jeb, J-e-b; Collin is his middle name,
- 5 spelled with two Ls or one L. I found it both ways.
- 6 And then Brock, B-r-o-c-k. He's a 43-year-old white
- 7 male.
- 8 O And how was he identified?
- 9 A He was identified by the family members at
- 10 the scene that called 9-1-1, that -- and then also, he
- was identified by fingerprints at autopsy.
- 12 Q Okay. Was -- was he pronounced dead at the
- scene or was he transported to an area hospital for
- 14 treatment?
- 15 A He was pronounced deceased at the scene by
- 16 American Medical Response or an AMR supervisor that
- 17 was at the scene.
- 18 Q Okay. As you began to familiarize yourself
- 19 with what had already happened and -- and began your
- 20 investigation, did you look at the -- what's referred
- 21 to as the CAD report to get a timeline of exactly when
- things happened in the incident?
- 23 A Yes, I did.
- Q All right. In fact, I'm going to direct you
- to the screen we have up here. Could you describe

- 1 what it is that we're seeing here?
- 2 A This is an overview of the CAD report
- 3 regarding this incident. And it -- we're kind of
- 4 breaking down by time some of the more significant
- 5 parts of the incident.
- 6 A GRAND JUROR: Is it okay if I interject
- 7 and ask a question?
- 8 THE WITNESS: Of course.
- 9 A GRAND JUROR: What does CAD stand for?
- 10 THE WITNESS: Computer-aided dispatch. So
- dispatch, as all this information's coming in, they
- document it and everything's logged by date and time
- 13 and --
- 14 A GRAND JUROR: So as the 9-1-1 calls are
- 15 coming in, they're --
- 16 THE WITNESS: They're making note -- the
- dispatchers are making notations, which are logged by
- 18 time. And then we have gone through their report and
- 19 generated sort of a more user-friendly version of the
- 20 events.
- 21 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 22 Q Okay. Could you take us through what we're
- 23 seeing here?
- 24 A Yeah. So --
- Q If you'd like to come up.

- 1 A Sure. Yeah.
- So at 4:14 a.m., we had the first 9-1-1 call
- for this incident. That was made by
- 4 This is at the residence on Southeast
- 5 Street. At 4:15 a.m., dispatchers dispatch police and
- 6 medical to the address on report of multiple --
- 7 multiple stabbing victims at the residence.
- 8 At 4:16 a.m., we received a second 9-1-1
- 9 call from the residence from Delbert Littlejohn. And
- then at 4:18 a.m., there was a third 9-1-1 call from
- 11 the residence from Betty Littlejohn.
- 12 A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
- 13 BY MR. JACKSON:
- Q What also happened at 4:18 a.m.?
- 15 A Officer Michael Gonzalez, one of the
- involved officers, was on scene and was walking up to
- the residence to get eyes on to determine what was
- 18 occurring.
- 19 Q Okay. What happened next?
- 20 A Officer Michael Gonzalez updated at
- 4:18 a.m., that there was an active disturbance at the
- 22 residence and multiple victims. And this was from
- 23 outside. He was observing this from outside the
- 24 residence.
- Q Okay.

- 1 A At 4:20 a.m., Portland police officers
- 2 Young, Burns, Ford and Sergeant Mooney were on scene.
- 3 And then a minute later at 4:21 a.m., Officer Rizzo
- 4 and Sergeant Searle arrived.
- 5 Q Okay.
- 6 A The -- 4:22 a.m., Sergeant Mooney updated
- 7 that the officers were going to clear the residence.
- 8 0 What does that mean?
- 9 A It -- clearing the residence means they
- are -- a group of officers are going to enter the
- 11 residence to make it secure and make it safe, locate
- victims, render aid. Those are just some of the
- 13 responsibilities.
- 14 A GRAND JUROR: So that's calling back in to
- 15 state that they have probable -- probable cause to
- 16 enter?
- 17 THE WITNESS: So, in this instance, because
- 18 of the nature of -- which I'm -- we will get into the
- 19 nature of the call with multiple stabbing victims,
- 20 with there being victims that are injured when they
- initially encounter them at the scene, the police have
- 22 the duty and authority to enter the residence to
- 23 determine if there's anyone else that's injured inside
- or anyone else that's in need of -- of aid.
- 25 BY MR. JACKSON:

- 1 Q And if they also are perceiving that the
- 2 threat is still active, do they have a duty or
- 3 responsibility to go in to deal with the threat?
- 4 A That is correct.
- 5 Q And is that what happened in this case?
- 6 A It is, yes.
- 7 O So that was 4:22?
- 8 A Yes.
- 9 Q Sergeant Mooney says that they're going to
- 10 clear the residence.
- 11 A That's correct. Two minutes later,
- 12 Officer Burns updates dispatch via radio that the
- 13 suspect is refusing to drop a knife, that he is saying
- 14 he's going to kill a female and has a knife to the
- female's throat and that the suspect is telling police
- 16 to kill him.
- 17 One minute later at 4:25 a.m., the officers
- 18 update dispatch that the suspect is down. And, in
- 19 this case, has been shot. And that officers are
- 20 working to get the victims out of the residence.
- Q Okay.
- 22 A So at 4:26 a.m., Officer Gonzalez updates
- that the suspect is deceased. And then two minutes
- 24 after that, at 4:28 a.m., that the scene is secure and
- safe for medical personnel to come in.

1	In these incidents, police and medical are
2	dispatched almost simultaneously to to the scene.
3	But medical will not go into the scene until the
4	police officers have rendered it safe for them to
5	do so.
6	A GRAND JUROR: Can you go back one slide
7	for just a second?
8	MR. JACKSON: Yes.
9	A GRAND JUROR: Okay. Thank you.
LO	BY MR. JACKSON:
L1	Q So, Detective, based on this CAD timeline,
L2	from the moment the police are called at 4:14 to the
L3	point when the scene is secure and safe and the
L4	victims are having medical aid rendered, we're talking
L5	about a total of 14 minutes?
L6	A That's correct.
L7	Q All right. Why don't you stay up here by
L8	the screen. So
L9	A Okay.
20	Q you've already said that this happened at
21	What are we seeing on
22	the screen here?
23	A This is an overview map of the pin at that
24	address on Street showing that it's general
25	area or its location in regards to the neighborhood,

1 the Powell Gilbert neighborhood	上	or
-----------------------------------	---	----

- 2 Powellhurst-Gilbert neighborhood.
- 3 Q What do we see now?
- 4 A And that's just a pin on the top of the
- 5 house showing that it's at the corner of and
- the southwest corner.
- 7 Q Okay. And can you describe what we're
- 8 seeing in terms of where the driveway is, what's in
- 9 the driveway and what some of these other objects are
- 10 that we're seeing here?
- 11 A Yeah. So the driveway is on the west side
- of the residence here. I believe what this is showing
- is the motor home that's in the driveway, other
- 14 vehicles. And then you can see a travel trailer or
- 15 little trailer in the backyard and then there's some
- garbage and other items on the property.
- 17 O Okay. Is that consistent with how it looked
- when you were out at the scene on April 29th?
- 19 A Yes.
- 20 Q Okay. As part of the investigation, was a
- Leica scan done of the crime scene?
- 22 A Yes. And the Forensic Evidence Division,
- 23 the crime scene technicians, conducted a Leica scan.
- 24 It's a three-dimensional laser scan of the scene to
- 25 document for future use.

1	Q Okay. And so before we actually pull the
2	Leica scan up, have you prepared a line diagram of the
3	actual residence itself?
4	A Yes, I have. And it's displayed here.
5	Q Could you take us through what we're seeing
6	on your line diagram?
7	A Yeah. So the residence on is a a
8	one-story, single-family residence. It was a three
9	bedroom, one bath, so this diagram just shows the
10	general layout of the residence.
11	The front of the house is oriented to the
12	north, so this would be Street. This would be
13	And then it shows the beds oriented in the
14	respective bedrooms as we found them and sort of the
15	general layout of the living room and garage area.
16	Q Are these rooms labeled?
17	A Yes, they are. Each person had a room and
18	that's what these labels show.
19	MR. JACKSON: Okay. Are there any questions
20	about the layout of the house before we look at the
21	Leica scan?
22	I don't see any. Okay.
23	BY MR. JACKSON:
24	Q So, Detective, what are we seeing here?

A We are seeing the -- the front of on

1	And you see several vehicles, a motor home
2	parked in the driveway. You can also see some
3	these placards here are marked let's see here.
4	Sorry. Placard marked with a letter A and B, those
5	are placards that we use to mark evidence.
6	Q Okay. What is your understanding of what
7	those particular placards are marking?
8	A Blood in front of the residence. And this
9	is sort of standing generally off to this side looking
10	at this direction. You're you're sort of looking
11	southwest.
12	Q Okay. At the front of the residence?

- 13 A Correct.
- Q Okay. And is this consistent with how you remember the scene looking when you were out there?
- 16 A Yes.
- Q Okay. What is in this area here behind the gray Subaru marked as, I think, Placard B?
- 19 A There's a blood-soaked item there, I believe 20 it's a towel and blood, on the driveway area.
- 21 Q And what is this item next to the bloody
- 22 area?
- 23 A It is called an IFAK kit, so it's an
- individual first-aid kit. It's issued to Portland
- 25 police officers to use to render aid to injured

- 1 victims.
- 2 Q Okay.
- 3 A And it's -- it was opened and the items were
- 4 pulled out of it.
- 5 Q And just for the record, we're at Station 1
- 6 in the Leica TruView scan.
- 7 Detective, is it your understanding that for
- 8 Station 2, there was an error in the actual
- 9 photographing from that particular station?
- 10 A I am.
- 11 Q Okay. And so if we click on this one, what
- we'll see is the point cloud scan done without the
- 13 photograph overlay?
- 14 A That's correct.
- 15 O So I'll do that now. So is this,
- essentially, what a Leica scan looks like without the
- 17 photograph laid over the top of it?
- 18 A Yes.
- 19 Q Okay. We'll go to Station 3. What are we
- 20 seeing here?
- 21 A This is the motor home parked in the
- 22 driveway. We're looking due west. The residence is
- 23 here in the left frame of the picture and there is
- 24 some -- which will be more visible later, but there's
- some blood droplets on the hood of the vehicle here.

- 1 This motor home we determined was occupied by Lana
- 2 Eide -- or Lana Eide and Shane Lunceford.
- 3 Q Okay. And as we spin around, this is
- 4 looking back towards Station 1 where we were just
- 5 looking?
- 6 A Mm-hmm.
- 7 O And is this the front door of the residence?
- 8 A It is.
- 9 Q Okay. We'll go to Station 5. What are we
- 10 seeing there?
- 11 A This is just inside the front door looking
- 12 out the driveway area.
- 13 Q And as we spin around, what are we seeing
- 14 now?
- 15 A The living room of the residence.
- 16 Q Okay.
- 17 A Of note, there's two particular areas of
- 18 note here. This couch, there's blood soaking on the
- 19 cushion and there is a piece of -- broken piece of
- denture on the ground.
- 21 Q So what are we seeing here now?
- 22 A Just an additional view of the living room
- area. Now, we can start to see the dining room and
- the rear slider, which goes into the backyard.
- Q Okay. That was Station 10. We'll now go to

- 1 Station 12.
- 2 A And this is the backyard of the residence,
- 3 which you see the trailer and some of the items in the
- 4 backyard.
- 5 Q Okay. And back here on the east side of the
- 6 residence, there's a fence?
- 7 A With a gate, yes.
- 8 Q Okay.
- 9 A A large, open gate to get this in and
- 10 out of.
- 11 Q So you can actually access the backyard
- 12 directly off of --
- 13 A That's correct.
- 14 Q -- Avenue? Okay. And --
- 15 A GRAND JUROR: And that's a separate
- 16 trailer from the one that's parked --
- 17 THE WITNESS: In the driveway.
- 18 A GRAND JUROR: -- in the driveway?
- 19 THE WITNESS: Correct. And then of note in
- 20 the backyard, there was some blood droplet -- blood
- 21 droplets on the ground outside the back here.
- 22 BY MR. JACKSON:
- Q Okay. Okay. So, now, what are we seeing
- 24 here?
- 25 A This scan station is down the hallway of the

- 1 residence looking -- in this view, looking back into
- 2 the living room. This is actually a -- a birdcage
- 3 here. But you can see this large blood trail in the
- 4 hallway area.
- 5 Q Okay. And for the record, we're on Station
- 6. As we spin around to the left, what do we see
- 7 here?
- 8 A This is the single bath of the residence.
- 9 And this bedroom here is the north -- excuse me, the
- 10 southeast corner bedroom for Betty Littlejohn. She's
- 11 the homeowner.
- 12 And, now, we're looking at the northeast
- corner bedroom. This is the bedroom of Derrick
- 14 Rogers, and their one-and-a-half year
- old daughter, Dahlia. And this is where the
- officer-involved shooting occurred.
- 17 O Okay. And then what about the last room we
- 18 see there?
- 19 A And the -- yeah. The bedroom on the north
- 20 side of the residence is Delbert Littlejohn's.
- 21 Q Okay.
- 22 A GRAND JUROR: How are Derrick and
- related to Betty?
- 24 THE WITNESS: Derrick is Betty's grandson.
- 25 A GRAND JUROR: Okay.

- 1 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 2 Q And is Derrick's fiance?
- 3 A Yes. And they have a child together.
- 4 Q Okay. And so you already said this last
- 5 room was Delbert Littlejohn's room?
- 6 A That's correct.
- 7 O And then what do we see here marked on the
- 8 ground?
- 9 A A few items, which we'll see in more detail
- 10 later, but this is Officer Gonzalez's flashlight. And
- then Placard 7 and 8 are the cartridges from the 40
- millimeter sponge round, less lethal rounds that were
- used.
- 0 Okay. And we could --
- 15 A And one of them is partially in the bedroom
- and the other one's here in the hallway.
- 17 Q Okay. And we can see blood on the ground
- 18 here in this hallway?
- 19 A That is correct. And that blood pretty much
- 20 extended throughout the whole house to the front door.
- 21 A GRAND JUROR: And those -- those
- 22 cartridges are ejected to the left?
- THE WITNESS: Well, we'll get into that.
- No, they are not ejected. They are manually pulled
- out. Those were the less lethal rounds.

- 1 A GRAND JUROR: Yeah.
- THE WITNESS: You actually have to pull
- 3 the -- the spent cartridge --
- 4 A GRAND JUROR: Sort of --
- 5 THE WITNESS: -- out.
- 6 A GRAND JUROR: Sort of like a shotgun
- 7 kind of?
- 8 THE WITNESS: Well, shotguns still --
- 9 they'll -- they'll be -- you know, the -- the ejected
- 10 round will come out when you rack the slide. This
- one, it -- it's like a breach load. You -- you open
- it and you pull it out and you have to load a new one
- in, so it's just dropped.
- 14 A GRAND JUROR: Like an old-fashioned
- 15 shotgun?
- 16 THE WITNESS: Yes.
- 17 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 18 Q And, now, we go to Station 9. What do we
- 19 see here?
- 20 A This is an inside view of Delbert
- 21 Littlejohn's bedroom.
- 22 Q Okay. And as we spin around to the left,
- 23 what do we see?
- 24 A We're looking back out into the hallway area
- and of note -- and of note, there's a -- was a fair

- 1 amount of what appeared to be blood behind the door on
- 2 the wall and to the right of the door. Items --
- 3 Q Blood spatter down here?
- 4 A Blood spatter and items knocked down. We'll
- 5 have -- there's additional photographs of this bedroom
- 6 later.
- 7 O And then is this kind of the chest or
- 8 drawers and television --
- 9 A Yes.
- 10 Q -- here? Okay.
- 11 MR. JACKSON: That was the -- what I had
- 12 planned to present in terms of the Leica scan. Would
- anybody like to see any of the stations we've already
- 14 viewed again?
- 15 A GRAND JUROR: No.
- MR. JACKSON: I don't see anyone. All
- 17 right.
- 18 A GRAND JUROR: Can I go to the bathroom?
- 19 MR. JACKSON: Yes. So we've had a -- a
- 20 request for a bathroom break from a grand juror. Why
- 21 don't we go off the record?
- 22 (Recess taken, 10:59 a.m. 11:01 a.m.)
- 23 MR. JACKSON: Okay. And we're back on the
- 24 record.
- 25 BY MR. JACKSON:

- 1 Q So, Detective, you want to --
- 2 A Yeah.
- 3 Q -- come back up here to the screen?
- 4 You mentioned as part of your initial
- 5 response, members of Portland Police Bureau's Forensic
- 6 Evidence Division will also come out to the scene?
- 7 A That's correct.
- 8 O There's a criminalist that will assist in
- 9 documenting, capturing the evidence -- collecting the
- 10 evidence, I should say --
- 11 A Yes.
- 12 Q -- (indiscernible)?
- 13 A Yes.
- 14 O In this case, when the Forensic Evidence
- Division criminalists came out, did they do a video
- walk-through of the house?
- 17 A They did, yes.
- 18 Q Okay.
- 19 A A video and they took photographs. We -- we
- 20 want to document the scene as it is before we bring
- 21 our personnel in to process it.
- 22 Q And were they also responsible for doing the
- Leica scans we just looked at?
- 24 A Yes.
- 25 O Okay. And so --

- 1 A GRAND JUROR: Now --
- MR. JACKSON: Oh, go ahead.
- 3 A GRAND JUROR: When -- when you typically
- 4 hear forensic expert instead of criminalist, is there
- 5 a difference?
- 6 THE WITNESS: Our members are called
- 7 criminalists. You often have forensic experts that
- 8 work for the Crime Lab.
- 9 A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
- 10 THE WITNESS: We don't have any forensic
- 11 experts that are -- we don't have that position at the
- 12 Police Bureau.
- 13 A GRAND JUROR: Okay. So they're
- investigators specifically going to crime scenes and
- 15 collecting evidence?
- 16 THE WITNESS: That's correct.
- 17 A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
- 18 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 19 Q And do they receive specialized training and
- 20 certifications to actually do that work or perform
- 21 that function?
- 22 A Yes.
- Q Okay. And so, Detective Law, in this case,
- 24 do you see the image on the screen?
- 25 A Yes.

- 1 Q And is this one of the scene walk-through
- 2 videos that the Forensic Evidence Division made of the
- 3 scene prior to its processing?
- 4 A Correct.
- 5 Q We'll play that now.
- 6 (TRANSCRIBER'S NOTE: Playing DVD with no
- 7 audio, 11:03 a.m. 11:07 a.m.)
- A GRAND JUROR: That's Betty's room?
- 9 THE WITNESS: Correct.
- 10 (TRANSCRIBER'S NOTE: Playing DVD with no
- 11 audio, 11:07 a.m. 11:08 a.m.)
- 12 A GRAND JUROR: What is that cord on the
- 13 floor?
- 14 THE WITNESS: I'm sorry?
- 15 A GRAND JUROR: That cord that goes into the
- 16 bedroom on the floor. It's not a -- it's not an
- 17 important --
- 18 THE WITNESS: Can you go back to the end of
- 19 the video?
- MR. JACKSON: Yeah.
- 21 A GRAND JUROR: I was wondering if it was
- 22 part of your investigation -- that right there. That.
- THE WITNESS: Ah.
- 24 A GRAND JUROR: Okay. So it's not part of
- 25 your investigation?

1	THE WITNESS: No.
2	A GRAND JUROR: It's not
3	THE WITNESS: I'm not I'm not sure what
4	that was.
5	A GRAND JUROR: I also have, like, kind of
6	an odd question. There's, like
7	THE WITNESS: Go ahead.
8	A GRAND JUROR: Obviously, there's animals
9	in that house, like a cat and a dog. Is there any
10	concern of animals, like
11	A GRAND JUROR: Messing with
12	A GRAND JUROR: not messing
13	A GRAND JUROR: blood on the floor?
14	A GRAND JUROR: not or, like, is or
15	is it since it's all dry, it's not
16	A GRAND JUROR: Disturbing the
17	A GRAND JUROR: really a
18	A GRAND JUROR: scene?
19	A GRAND JUROR: concern? Is it
20	THE WITNESS: I know that the
21	A GRAND JUROR: concerning?
22	THE WITNESS: dog was removed I
23	believe, was removed from the house
24	A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
25	THE WITNESS: at some point, so we could

- 1 process. I'm not sure where the cat ended up.
- 2 A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
- 3 THE WITNESS: But, normally, the short
- 4 answer is no.
- 5 A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
- 6 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 7 Q And, Detective, was the scene also
- 8 documented photographically?
- 9 A Yes.
- 10 Q All right. So as we walk through some of
- 11 the scene photos, if you could remain up by the board
- for us. So what are we seeing here?
- 13 A We're seeing the -- the front of
- 14 Southeast Avenue, just another view. And this
- is from the -- the corner of the intersection looking
- back at the house showing the trees and bushes. And
- 17 over here, you see the -- that gate into the backyard
- 18 that we mentioned earlier.
- 19 A GRAND JUROR: They got the trailer in
- 20 that?
- 21 THE WITNESS: Yeah. It's just a close-up
- 22 view of the gate. And this is a view of the items in
- 23 the backyard looking to the west. Here, we have,
- 24 again, the blood-soaked towel and pieces of the IFAK
- 25 kit and some blood on the ground.

- 1 A GRAND JUROR: Are those gloves?
- 2 THE WITNESS: Yeah. There was a pair of
- 3 latex gloves or a glove that was --
- 4 A GRAND JUROR: An officer aiding --
- 5 THE WITNESS: Correct.
- 6 A GRAND JUROR: -- somebody? Okay.
- 7 THE WITNESS: That's the blood in the
- 8 driveway.
- 9 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 11 that that was from Derrick Rogers?
- 12 A That's correct. This is the white Cadillac
- in the driveway. You see some apparent blood on the
- 14 hood and the front steps of the residence. And the
- 15 living room, bloodstaining on the couch cushion and
- 16 the broken denture piece.
- 17 Q Okay. And what is your understanding from
- the investigation in terms of who that denture piece
- 19 belongs to?
- 20 A This came from Jon Brock, who is Jeb Brock's
- 21 father.
- 22 O And was he seated on the couch where that
- 23 bloodstain was you previously identified?
- 24 A Yes, correct.
- A GRAND JUROR: So we think the blood

- 1 is his?
- THE WITNESS: Correct.
- 3 A GRAND JUROR: Okay. That one.
- 4 A GRAND JUROR: That's the couch on the
- 5 left of --
- 6 THE WITNESS: Immediately inside the door.
- 7 A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
- 8 THE WITNESS: And this is the dining room
- 9 area and the blood in the hallway. The kitchen. I
- just want to take note of the knife block and the
- 11 types of knives in the block.
- 12 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 13 Q Okay. Could you describe those knives
- 14 for us?
- 15 A Yes. They -- they appear to be
- 16 standard-sized kitchen knives. They have a -- sort of
- 17 a white handle and a silver inlet in the handle. And
- 18 this is in a -- a wooden block in the kitchen.
- 19 A GRAND JUROR: Yeah. That would be the
- tang going through the handle.
- 21 THE WITNESS: I'm sorry?
- 22 A GRAND JUROR: That would be the tang going
- through the handle.
- 24 THE WITNESS: The tang.
- BY MR. JACKSON:

- 1 Q And is there one of the larger knives
- 2 missing from this knife block?
- 3 A That's correct. And this is looking down
- 4 the hallway to where the bedrooms are. We had
- 5 mentioned this before in the Leica scan this is
- 6 Officer Gonzalez's flashlight. And this cartridge
- 7 here and this cartridge here are spent 40-millimeter
- 8 less lethal cartridges. And those are attributable to
- 9 Officer Rizzo.
- 10 O Aaron Rizzo?
- 11 A Correct. That's another view of the
- 12 cartridge.
- 13 A GRAND JUROR: And those -- those are
- sponge rounds; is that correct?
- 15 THE WITNESS: Yes. And we have some more
- 16 photographs of the sponge rounds so you can see a -- a
- 17 full, intact round.
- This is from Delbert Littlejohn's bedroom.
- 19 Looking out into the hallway, you can see items
- 20 knocked over; some of the blood on the wall behind the
- 21 door by the vacuum and some blood spatter.
- 22 BY MR. JACKSON:
- Q Okay. Where is this photo oriented in
- 24 the room?
- 25 A This is to -- to the right of the door.

1	Oka ¹	y. Right	by t	he c	doori	amb?

- 2 A Yeah. And this is looking into and
- 3 Derrick's bedroom and this is the Pack 'n Play crib
- 4 for Dahlia, their daughter.
- 5 Q As we go into the room, can you describe
- 6 what we're seeing?
- 7 A Yes. So as I mentioned before, this is the
- 8 kitchen knife. We believe it came from the block in
- 9 the kitchen. You'll see a closeup of it. It appears
- 10 to have bloodstaining on it. It's approximately a
- 11 seven-and-a-half inch long blade.
- 12 And we have a sledgehammer on the bed with
- some bloodstaining on the handle, apparent
- 14 bloodstaining, a cellular phone and Mr. Brock lying --
- 15 lying on the bed against the wall.
- On the Pack 'n Play, what do you see there?
- 17 A There is some apparent bloodstaining on the
- 18 side of the Pack 'n Play.
- 19 Q Okay. Is there also some on the top of
- 20 what -- in this photograph oriented to the top inside
- of the Pack 'n Play?
- 22 A Yes.
- Q Okay. Detective, did you examine the
- 24 sledgehammer that was recovered from the bed here?
- 25 A It was photographed.

- 1 Q What is it made of?
- 2 A It's a wood handle with a steel -- you know,
- 3 steel head. This --
- 4 O So it's not rubber?
- 5 A No.
- 6 Q It's a metal sledgehammer?
- 7 A Yeah.
- 8 A GRAND JUROR: How long is the -- is the
- 9 handle, about?
- 10 THE WITNESS: I believe we have --
- 11 A GRAND JUROR: It's okay.
- MR. JACKSON: Here we go.
- 13 A GRAND JUROR: Oh, there it is.
- 14 THE WITNESS: Yeah. It's just a --
- 15 A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
- 16 THE WITNESS: -- close-up picture of it.
- 17 It -- it appears that it's over 12 inches.
- A GRAND JUROR: Mm-hmm.
- 19 A GRAND JUROR: So it's, like, a 24 inch?
- THE WITNESS: Yeah, 18 maybe, an 18 inch.
- 21 A GRAND JUROR: Yeah, okay. Yeah.
- 22 THE WITNESS: That looks like about
- 23 18 inches.
- 24 A GRAND JUROR: Yeah.
- 25 BY MR. JACKSON:

- 1 Q So what are we seeing here?
- 2 A So these -- these are Mr. Brock's feet. And
- 3 this is a fired cartridge casing on the bed partially
- 4 underneath this blanket here. And this is a GPS
- 5 monitor on his right ankle.
- 6 A GRAND JUROR: Okay. So we're not -- not
- 7 to utilize the fact that he has a GPS monitor in this
- 8 case, but --
- 9 MR. JACKSON: There'll be some
- 10 information --
- 11 A GRAND JUROR: This is --
- MR. JACKSON: -- presented on that later.
- 13 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 14 0 What's this?
- 15 A This is a photograph of pants
- and underwear that were collected from the bed. And
- 17 they're basically kind of intermingled with each
- 18 other.
- 19 Q Is it your understanding from the
- 20 investigation that these are the pants and underwear
- 21 she was wearing when Jeb Brock had sexually
- assaulted her?
- 23 A That's correct.
- Q And what do we see here?
- 25 A These -- now that the pants and underwear

- 1 have been separated and the pants have been laid out
- 2 for a photograph.
- Q What is that on --
- 4 A That's what is depicted in the picture.
- 5 Q What is that on the leg --
- 6 A I believe --
- 7 Q -- of her pants?
- 8 A -- it's bloodstaining. And we've already
- 9 seen the photographs of the sledgehammer. This is
- 10 laundry hamper in the bedroom. And this is a
- 11 photograph of me.
- I searched that laundry hamper. We moved a
- 13 lot of the stuff from -- some of the items we moved
- from Derrick and bedroom to Betty's bedroom so
- 15 we could search them because there was just a lot
- 16 going on in here.
- 17 It was a pretty confined and -- and cramped
- 18 space, so we moved the laundry hamper or laundry
- 19 basket to Betty's room. As I was removing the items
- 20 from the top of it, a shell casing fell out of, and
- it's just a fired cartridge casing. There will be
- 22 some more photographs of the two casings that were
- 23 recovered.
- 24 Q Okay. And what is -- are we seeing in --
- 25 that's in this photograph?

- 1 A There's a -- another pair of pants and
- 2 underwear together, but also the paper bag here where
- 3 we located some bullet fragments, copper fragments.
- 4 Q Okay. What is this?
- 5 A This is a shoe that was in that previously
- 6 described paper bag and there's some copper jacketing
- 7 from the bullet on the shoe.
- 8 And this is an additional -- or a close-in
- 9 photograph of the copper jacketing.
- 11 A That came from a bullet.
- 12 Q Okay.
- 13 A It's bullet fragments that -- a bullet
- struck something and the fragments came back.
- 15 Q Okay. And copper jacketing, does that mean
- it's separated from the actual lead bullet itself?
- 17 A Correct.
- 18 Q Okay.
- 19 A And, initially, the bullet was not found on
- 20 the bed until the blanket was moved. And that's just
- 21 a photograph of the casing, the fired cartridge casing
- 22 on the bed.
- 23 Q And what did you --
- 24 A And --

- 1 A The pants and underwear.
- 2 Q Okay. And what -- what is that bottle we
- 3 see there?
- 4 A That was a little canister that had some
- 5 pills in it, like, prescription pills. And you want
- 6 to go -- I think there's another picture. There was
- 7 some bullet fragments on the bed as well.
- 8 O So what do we see here?
- 9 A This is a photograph of one of the cartridge
- 10 casings. This is the casing that was recovered from
- 11 the bed. It's a 9-millimeter Luger.
- 12 O And is that the standard round that Portland
- 13 police officers carry and use?
- 14 A Yes. And --
- 15 0 What do we see here?
- 16 A This is a sponge round. This is an expelled
- 17 less lethal 40-millimeter sponge round. So there were
- 18 two rounds -- two rounds fired.
- 19 Q Where is that in the room if you could
- 20 point --
- 21 A So --
- 22 0 -- it for us?
- 23 A -- that would be right here on this couch,
- 24 so to the right.
- 25 A GRAND JUROR: That's next to the Pack 'n

- 1 Play?
- THE WITNESS: Yeah. So couch, Pack 'n Play,
- 3 then bed.
- 4 A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
- 5 THE WITNESS: So it would have hit and came
- 6 back. And that's just the -- and there'll be an other
- 7 photograph of it, but that's the -- what's left of the
- 8 round once it's fired.
- 9 And then this is the second less lethal
- 10 round. Again, you see the blue sponge head. And this
- 11 would have been -- there was just a small, little
- 12 space between the bed and the wall.
- 13 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 14 Q And that's where that was recovered?
- 15 A Yeah. And Mr. Brock would have been
- 16 generally oriented over here.
- 17 Q Okay.
- 18 A And this is a photograph of the
- 19 40-millimeter less lethal round.
- 20 Q So they're fired out of those metal
- 21 canisters we saw documented at Placards 7 and 8?
- 22 A Correct.
- Q Okay. And, Detective, as part of the
- 24 investigation, was it your understanding that a number
- of people were severely injured by Jeb Brock in the

- 1 course of the incident that led up to the
- 2 officer-involved shooting?
- 3 A Yes.
- 4 Q Did you identify those people?
- 5 A Yes, we did.
- 6 Q Who were they?
- 7 A Jon Brock, Delbert Littlejohn, Derrick
- 8 Rogers, received injuries.
- 9 Q Okay. And were they transported to area
- 10 hospitals for treatment of their injuries?
- 11 A Yes. All of them were, yes.
- 12 Q And did you have members of the Forensic
- 13 Evidence Division go out to photograph and document
- whatever injuries they could, given the medical
- 15 treatment that was under way?
- 16 A We did, yes. And we also interviewed those
- individuals when they were medically stable at a
- 18 later time.
- 19 Q Did they all go to the same hospital?
- 20 A They did.
- Q Which hospital?
- A OHSU.
- 23 Q And we now move to Jon Brock's injuries.
- 24 And just to remind us, where was he in the house when
- 25 he was found?

- 1 A In the living room on the couch where you've
- 2 seen the photographs of the bloodstained cushion and
- 3 the broken denture.
- 4 Q Okay. If you'd describe what your
- 5 understanding of his injuries were.
- 6 A My understanding was he -- in the most
- 7 simplest terms, he had a skull fracture, a brain
- 8 bleed, his ear was partially severed off, his right
- 9 ear, and he had a -- a knife injury to his neck.
- 10 O Is this the ear?
- 11 A Yes.
- 12 Q And was the depressed skull fracture on the
- 13 right side of his head?
- 14 A Yes.
- 15 O Okay. What is this one?
- 16 A This is a back view of his head. You can
- 17 see all the bloodstaining, injury to his left hand.
- 18 Q Is what we're seeing here?
- 19 A Yes.
- Q Okay.
- 21 A And you can see the contusion and bruising
- to his face.
- Q Okay. This is a few days later after he was
- 24 cleaned up?
- 25 A Yes.

- 1 Q Okay.
- 2 A And that's stitched knife injury to his
- 3 neck, the left side of his neck.
- 4 Q Okay. And it's oriented kind of toward the
- front Adam's apple back toward the middle of the neck?
- 6 A Yep.
- 8 the Forensic Evidence Division document Delbert
- 9 Littlejohn's injuries?
- 10 A That's correct.
- 11 MR. JACKSON: Okay.
- 12 A GRAND JUROR: I'm sorry. I want to make
- sure that I'm getting -- the previous photos were
- of who?
- 15 THE WITNESS: Jon Brock.
- 16 A GRAND JUROR: Thank you.
- 17 A GRAND JUROR: On the couch in the front?
- 18 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 19 Q And where was Delbert injured?
- 20 A Delbert was struck --
- 21 Q I'm sorry. Where in the house --
- 22 A Oh.
- 24 A Yes. We believe inside of his bedroom.
- Q Okay. And what is your understanding of

- 1 what his injuries were?
- 2 A He had stab wounds and was struck in the
- 3 head with a sledgehammer. You can see some of his
- 4 injuries here in the photograph --
- 5 Q Okay.
- 6 A -- to his left shoulder, left chest and then
- 7 the sledgehammer injury to the back, left side of his
- 8 head. And he had a stab wound to his left calf,
- 9 outside of this calf.
- 10 Okay. And same for Derrick Rogers, was --
- were his injuries documented by the Forensic Evidence
- 12 Division?
- 13 A Yes.
- Q Photographically?
- 15 A Correct.
- 16 Q And where was he injured?
- 17 A Generally, he was standing in the doorway of
- 18 his bedroom.
- 19 Q Okay.
- 20 A This is a photograph of him in his
- 21 hospital bed.
- 22 Q What is your understanding of his injuries?
- 23 A He had a fracture. He was struck in the
- 24 nose. He had fractures related to a sledgehammer
- injury. He had a stab wound to his neck and a stab

- 1 wound to his right arm.
- 2 Q What do you see here?
- 3 A This is the right side of his neck where he
- 4 sustained a stab wound and it's been stitched up.
- 5 Q Okay. And what do we see here?
- 6 A We see the front of Derrick Rogers' face.
- 7 Q Okay. And it's your understanding that his
- 8 nose was badly broken?
- 9 A Yes.
- 10 Q Okay.
- 11 A And his wound on his right arm was dressed,
- so it -- we weren't able to photograph it without
- 13 removing the dressing.
- 14 Q And, now,
- 15 A Yes.
- Q Was she also transported to the hospital?
- 17 A She was.
- 18 Q And where was -- where were her injuries?
- 19 A She was on the bed.
- 20 Q Okay. In her bedroom?
- 21 A Yeah, the northeast corner bedroom.
- Q Okay. And this?
- 23 A This is a photograph of her in her hospital
- 24 bed. This is an injury related to a -- a bite -- a
- bite mark or a bite injury she sustained from the

- 1 suspect, Mr. Brock.
- These are some cuts. You see some dried
- 3 blood in her mouth and these were sustained during the
- 4 incident. You see some red marks on her neck, the
- front of her neck, and some cuts to her hands.
- 6 Q Thank you. And are those, in your
- 7 experience, consistent with what are called sometimes
- 8 defensive wounds or somebody trying to grab a knife
- 9 away from --
- 10 A Correct.
- 11 0 -- from an assailant?
- 12 A Yes. And some bruising to her knees.
- 13 Q Okay. You mentioned that as part of your
- investigation, you did a round countdown --
- 15 A That's correct.
- 17 explain for us what that is and what its
- importance is?
- 19 A Yeah. A round count is done at the scene,
- 20 so before the officers -- the involved officers leave
- 21 the -- the scene of the incident, we -- they are
- 22 photographed and we, basically, do an inventory of
- their weapon systems.
- 24 We make sure what weapons they do have or
- don't have. And then we document those weapons via

- 1 photographs and we also count the number of rounds in
- their magazines and the firearm. It's a way for us to
- document and determine how many rounds were fired.
- 4 Q How do you -- I mean, it may seem obvious,
- 5 but --
- 6 A Yeah.
- 7 how do you determine how many rounds were
- 8 fired through the round count process?
- 9 A So we collect the magazines from them and we
- 10 count each round. We photograph it and we take the
- 11 firearm from them and we eject a -- a round in the
- if -- if so and we count that and that's how
- 13 we do the round count.
- Q Okay. And how is it that you take that
- 15 information and then determine how many rounds were
- 16 fired?
- 17 A Well, based on the maximum capacity of the
- 18 magazines that we use for our duty -- duty firearms,
- 19 we're able to determine how many rounds were fired
- 20 and -- based on the number of rounds that each
- 21 individual officer loads into their magazines.
- 22 Q Okay. So, essentially, you take how many
- 23 they started their shift with --
- 24 A Yeah.
- Q -- how many they have now, subtract them,

- 1 you get how many were fired?
- 2 A That's correct.
- 3 Q And then do you use that information to
- 4 assist in your processing of the scene itself as
- 5 you're looking for spent casings and other evidence of
- 6 gunfire?
- 7 A That's correct.
- 8 Q Okay. In this case, did the round counts
- 9 match up with the crime scene evidence in terms of
- 10 cartridge casings recovered as compared to the rounds
- 11 you expected to recover based on the round counts?
- 12 A That is correct.
- 13 Q How many rounds were fired?
- 14 A Two.
- 15 This is a photograph of Officer Aaron Rizzo.
- 16 This was taken, again, at the scene. This -- he's --
- has his 40-millimeter less lethal launcher, which he's
- 18 displaying in the photograph. He's wearing a --
- 19 Q Oh, sorry.
- 20 A Yeah, a standard Portland Police Bureau
- 21 uniform, badge -- a badge is displayed. And this is a
- 22 photograph of the 40-millimeter less lethal launcher.
- 23 As you -- your question, the rounds are pulled out --
- 24 A GRAND JUROR: Yeah.
- THE WITNESS: -- and you have to manually

- load a -- a round in each time.
- A GRAND JUROR: So it's a single shot?
- 3 THE WITNESS: Single shot.
- 4 And there are two different pouches that the
- 5 less lethal rounds are carried in. This is a butt
- 6 stock pouch. As you can see, there's -- there will be
- 7 an additional photograph of this, but there's one --
- 8 one round missing from the butt stock pouch.
- 9 And then there is a drop pouch, as they call
- it. It's often -- oftentimes worn on the leg. And
- 11 you can see that there is one round missing from the
- drop pouch. And we believe there were two rounds --
- less lethal rounds fired during the incident.
- 14 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 15 O You found two casings in the scene itself?
- 16 A Two casings and two fired rounds.
- 17 Q Okay. Is that an image of what an unfired
- 18 round looks like?
- 19 A Yes.
- Q Okay.
- 21 A So you -- you see where it separates from.
- 22 We went through and documented Officer Rizzo's
- firearm. Again, we did not believe he was one of the
- 24 officers that fired, but we wanted to make sure that
- 25 all officers involved -- directly involved in the

- incident, we document their status of their handguns
- 2 and their rounds.
- Q Okay.
- 4 A So what -- what is shown here is a
- 5 photograph of Officer Rizzo's Glock 17 nine-millimeter
- 6 handgun with the one round that was removed from the
- and was provided to investigators.
- 8 Q And is it your understanding from the
- 9 investigation that there were only three officers
- actually physically in the room with Mr. Brock when
- 11 the shooting occurred?
- 12 A That is correct.
- 13 Q And so who were those officers?
- 14 A Sergeant James Mooney, Officer Michael
- 15 Gonzalez and Officer Aaron Rizzo.
- 16 Q And so were those the three that you focused
- 17 your investigation on in terms of round counts to make
- 18 sure that there were no unaccounted-for rounds fired?
- 19 A That is correct.
- 20 Q So what did you find when you did the round
- 21 count for Officer Rizzo?
- 22 A His -- so we carry -- well, this is the
- 23 magazine from the firearm. And it has 17 rounds in
- 24 it. And then the standard magazine, if you want to go
- 25 back to --

- 1 Q Well, let me ask one question here about
- 2 this. So the round that we see in the picture, what
- 3 is that one?
- 4 A This is the one from the as I
- 5 mentioned.
- 6 Q Okay.
- 7 A So it was in the -- in the gun. When you
- 8 pull the slide back, the round is ejected and then we
- 9 set it there to document it.
- 10 Q Okay. And there are 17 that were in the
- 11 magazine that was actually in the gun?
- 12 A Correct.
- 13 Q And what is the maximum capacity of the
- 14 magazine?
- 15 A 17.
- 16 Q So what did you conclude from that
- 17 information?
- 18 A That no rounds -- he -- that this magazine
- 19 -- no -- no rounds were fired.
- 20 Q Okay.
- 21 A And these are the other two magazines for
- 22 Officer Rizzo. And --
- 23 Q Backup magazines, in other words?
- 24 A That's correct. I believe they're worn --
- 25 he had them in a pouch on his duty belt. And so when

- 1 you see a lower pouch and upper pouch, but both
- 2 magazines had 17 rounds.
- 3 A GRAND JUROR: So officers start their
- 4 shift with a round in the and a full magazine?
- 5 THE WITNESS: That is correct. And as you
- 6 will see, the definition of a full magazine can differ
- 7 from officer to officer.
- 8 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 9 Q Okay. Do they generally provide that
- information to you as part of the investigation?
- 11 A Yes.
- 12 Q What they consider a full magazine to be or
- what they usually do when they start shift?
- 14 A I'm sorry. You'll have to ask that one more
- 15 time.
- 16 Q Sure. Will you, essentially, ask the
- officer, "How do you load your magazines?"
- 18 A Yes.
- 19 Q So you can determine what --
- 20 A Yes.
- 22 count?
- 23 A Yes.
- Q And when you say that differs, what do you
- 25 mean?

1	A Well, so the this is a big spring inside									
2	the magazine here. And when you have all your rounds									
3	in it, it depresses the spring down. Some people									
4	believe that it's better to have less tension on the									
5	spring because those springs can wear out over time.									
6	So instead of keeping it at full capacity,									
7	which is always putting a lot of pressure on the									
8	spring, they'll lighten it by one round per magazine									
9	just to maybe extend the life of the spring.									
10	Q So it would be 16 at full capacity as									
11	opposed to 17?									
12	A Correct.									
13	MR. JACKSON: Okay.									
14	A GRAND JUROR: 16 in the magazine and one									
15	in the then?									
16	THE WITNESS: Yes. Like I said, they're									
17	some officers									
18	A GRAND JUROR: Depending on									
19	THE WITNESS: It's a									
20	A GRAND JUROR: Yeah.									
21	THE WITNESS: It's a matter of preference.									
22	You I mean, this will hold 17 rounds, but you can									
23	put 16 in it and it puts a little less tension on									
24	A GRAND JUROR: Yeah.									
25	THE WITNESS: the spring.									

1	A GRAND JUROR: I understand.
2	BY MR. JACKSON:
3	Q Do most officers, in your experience, do
4	what's called back filling or once they have the full
5	magazine, actually a round and then put an
6	additional one into the magazine?
7	A Yes. So yes. So once a round is put
8	into the they'll strip the they'll take
9	the magazine from the firearm, put another round back
10	into it 'cause you've pulled one out to put it in the
11	of the firearm. And then you'll put the
12	magazine back in the firearm.
13	MR. JACKSON: Okay. Are there any questions
14	about that?
15	I don't see any.
16	BY MR. JACKSON:
17	Q Okay. And so what did you determine when
18	you counted the rounds in Officer Rizzo's backup
19	magazines?
20	A That no rounds were fired. There were 17 in
21	each.
22	Q Okay.
23	A This is Officer Michael Gonzalez. Again,
24	and the photograph shows him at the scene in the
25	mobile command wearing the standard Portland

- 1 police uniform with badges displayed and you see his
- 2 handgun and his two magazine pouches.
- 3 Q And so when you say upper and lower,
- 4 that's --
- 5 A Yeah. The --
- 6 Q -- why they're documented --
- 7 A Top --
- 8 Q -- that way?
- 9 A Yeah, upper and lower.
- 10 Q Okay.
- 11 A And this is a photograph of
- 12 Officer Gonzalez's Glock 17 nine-millimeter handgun.
- And when we took possession of the gun, there was one
- round in the that's removed and photographed
- 15 here.
- 16 Q Okay.
- 17 A And this is Officer Gonzalez's magazine from
- 18 his handgun, which shows that there's 16 rounds.
- 19 Q And what was your understanding of
- 20 Officer Gonzalez -- of Officer Gonzalez's maximum
- 21 capacity based on his preference?
- 22 A That he loaded his round to his magazines as
- 23 17 rounds.
- 24 Q Okay. So what did you determine from that
- 25 information?

- 1 A That there was one round missing.
- Q Okay.
- 3 A When I say one round missing, it's one round
- 4 expelled.
- 5 Q Okay. Fired?
- 6 A Yes. And then these are -- these are
- 7 photographs of his other two magazine pouches, which
- 8 show that there are 17 rounds in each pouch.
- 9 Q Okay. What did you determine from that?
- 10 A That no rounds were -- no additional rounds
- 11 were fired.
- 12 And this is a photograph of Sergeant James
- Mooney in the mobile command at the scene. It
- 14 display -- it shows him wearing a standard Portland
- 15 Police Bureau uniform with badges displayed and he had
- his duty firearm on his side and upper and lower
- 17 magazine pouch.
- This is a photograph of Sergeant Mooney's
- 19 firearm as we took possession of it and removed a
- 20 round from the
- 21 Q Okay.
- 22 A Like Sergeant -- or I mean -- excuse me,
- like Officer Gonzalez, we located 16 rounds with one
- 24 round missing.
- 25 Q And -- okay. So your understanding was he

- 1 would fully load that magazine to 17?
- 2 A Yes.
- 3 Q And what do we see here?
- 4 A We see the upper and lower pouch magazines
- 5 with 16 rounds in each magazine. As I mentioned
- 6 before, his preference is to put one less round in
- 7 each magazine.
- 8 Q Okay. So he said 16 rounds per backup
- 9 magazine was -- that -- fully loaded, therefore --
- 10 A That's how he carried it.
- 11 Q Okay. So what did you determine from that
- 12 information?
- 13 A That Sergeant Mooney fired one round.
- 14 Q And once you completed the round counts, it
- 15 sounds like you had determined Sergeant -- or Officer
- 16 Rizzo fired two less lethal cartridges?
- 17 A Correct.
- 18 Q Officer Gonzalez and Sergeant Mooney were
- each missing one round; or, in other words, had fired
- 20 one round?
- 21 A That's correct.
- 22 Q And is that consistent with what you found
- in the crime scene itself?
- 24 A That is, yes. And those firearms were
- 25 collected and then they were later sent to the Crime

- 1 Lab for analysis.
- Q Okay. Was Mr. Brock's -- you can take a
- 3 seat --
- 4 A Okay.
- 5 Q -- here, Detective. Thank you.
- 6 Was Mr. Brock's body examined by the deputy
- 7 medical examiner for Multnomah County?
- 8 A Yes.
- 9 Q And, ultimately, was he transported to the
- Oregon State Police Medical Examiner's Office for
- 11 autopsy?
- 12 A Yes.
- Q Okay. And did you attend that autopsy?
- 14 A I did.
- MR. JACKSON: Detective, that's all the
- 16 questions I have for you at this point. I do plan to
- 17 call you back later on in the presentation.
- 18 But, at this point, do the grand jurors have
- 19 any questions for Detective Law?
- 20 A GRAND JUROR: Do we not want to visit what
- 21 was found at the autopsy at this point?
- MR. JACKSON: We will call the medical
- 23 examiner to present --
- 24 A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
- 25 MR. JACKSON: -- that information.

1	A GRAND JUROR: Oh.
2	MR. JACKSON: Are there any other questions
3	for Detective Law?
4	THE WITNESS: Thank you.
5	MR. JACKSON: Okay.
6	THE WITNESS: Thank you.
7	MR. JACKSON: Thank you very much.
8	A GRAND JUROR: Thank you.
9	MR. JACKSON: So why don't we take a brief
10	break. We'll go off the record.
11	(Recess taken, 11:38 a.m 11:47 a.m.)
12	MR. JACKSON: Okay. And we're back on the
13	record following our rest break, bathroom break. And
14	we're ready with our next witness.
15	If you could raise your right hand.
16	BRIAN J. HUGHES
17	Was thereupon called as a witness; and, having been
18	first duly sworn, was examined and testified as follows
19	EXAMINATION
20	BY MR. JACKSON:
21	Q You can have a seat.
22	And would you please state and spell your

A Yes. My name is Brian J. Hughes, B-r-i-a-n,

H-u-g-h-e-s.

23

name.

- 1 Q All right. And where do you work?
- 2 A I work at the Portland Police Bureau.
- What do you do for the Bureau?
- 4 A I am an acting lieutenant for the North
- 5 Precinct night shift.
- 6 Q And if we take you back to April 29th of
- 7 2019, what were you working that night?
- 8 A That night, I would have been a sergeant
- 9 assigned to the Patrol Division at East Precinct on
- 10 the night shift.
- 11 Q Okay. And just, generally speaking, what
- does East Precinct in -- cover?
- 13 A East Precinct covers, generally speaking,
- everything east of Cesar Chavez Boulevard, south of
- 15 Interstate 84, west of Gresham and north of Clackamas
- 16 County.
- 17 Q And do you recall, on April 29th, how many
- 18 sergeants were on shift with you for East Precinct?
- 19 A Yes. There was two sergeants and myself, so
- 20 a total of three.
- Q Okay. For that entire area?
- 22 A Yes.
- 23 Q And what are the responsibilities of a
- 24 patrol sergeant during a shift?
- A A sergeant supervises, does the line

- 1 supervisor job and they essentially supervise patrol
- 2 officers that go out and handle calls in the city and
- 3 sergeants approve their reports and would also
- 4 coordinate and respond to critical incidents.
- 5 O And what is a critical incident?
- 6 A A critical incident is a rapidly unfolding
- 7 event that generally involves a higher level of danger
- 8 to the people involved in the incident, the police and
- 9 the public.
- 10 O And do you remember what shift you were
- 11 actually working on April 29th?
- 12 A Yes.
- 0 What was it?
- 14 A The night shift, which starts at 10:00 and
- 15 is over at 8:00 a.m.
- 16 Q And do you recall hearing a call come out
- for a location, Southeast Avenue?
- 18 A Southeast --
- 19 Q Or --
- 20 A -- Street.
- 21 Q Street. I'm sorry. Yeah.
- 22 A Yes, I do.
- 23 Q Street. Okay. And where were you
- 24 when that call came out?
- 25 A I was in the area of the 9700 block of

- 1 Southeast Main Street.
- 2 Q Okay. And did you respond immediately?
- 3 A Not immediately.
- 4 Q And why not?
- 5 A Stabbings happen from time to time in the
- 6 precinct. And, generally, a -- a run-of-the-mill
- 7 stabbing is something a -- an officer can handle.
- 8 Q Okay. When did you become aware of the fact
- 9 that this may not have been what you call a
- 10 run-of-the-mill stabbing?
- 11 A I hate to say that, run of the mill, that
- sounds so bad. I knew it was something else when the
- 13 dispatcher added more comments on the radio saying
- 14 that multiple people had been stabbed; that -- there
- 15 was another comment that I heard on the radio that the
- suspect was stabbing everybody. And, at that point,
- 17 it was -- sounded to me like it was going to become a
- 18 critical incident, if it wasn't already.
- 19 Q Okay. And so did you respond at that point?
- 20 A Yes, I did.
- 21 Q And what was your understanding of who else
- was responding to that scene?
- 23 A Sergeant Paka (phonetic) Searle is one of
- 24 the other sergeants that was working with me. And
- 25 then I also believe Sergeant Jim Mooney would all --

- or James Mooney would also be responding.
- Q Okay. And is that in addition to the patrol
- 3 officers that were responding to the call?
- 4 A Yes.
- 5 Q As you were en route, what additional
- 6 information did you learn about the call?
- 7 A That somebody from inside the house called
- 8 in and was providing direct information to the
- 9 dispatcher. And like I said before, that a subject
- 10 was inside stabbing everyone. And I learned that some
- officers were making plans to -- how to -- how to deal
- 12 with the situation.
- 13 Q They were already on scene?
- 14 A Some were on scene arriving, yes.
- 15 Q Okay. Did you also receive an update that
- there was a baby in the house?
- 17 A Yes, I did.
- 18 Q Okay. When you were responding, were you
- 19 driving lights and sirens?
- 20 A Yes, I was.
- Q Okay. So you're trying to get there as fast
- as possible?
- 23 A Yes.
- Q Okay. When you got to the house, what did
- 25 you see?

- 1 A Well, I pulled up a little ways down the
- 2 street on Southeast to the west of the house
- and I had one of the patrol -- group of patrol
- 4 officers in front of me. They were also getting out
- 5 of their car.
- I saw -- as I got near to the house, I saw a
- 7 man who was in the driveway who had a severe -- what
- 8 appeared to be a stab wound to his neck. And there
- 9 was a lot of blood. There was blood everywhere.
- 10 Q And you were approaching on foot?
- 11 A Yes.
- 12 Q Okay. And why was that?
- 13 A Because I didn't know where the suspect was.
- I knew there was a group of officers in the house
- looking for the suspect, but I wasn't -- it was not
- 16 clear to me at that time where the suspect was, if the
- 17 suspect had come out. And so, typically, we'll park a
- 18 little ways away and walk in on foot 'cause the car
- 19 kind of announces police and if we walk in on foot, we
- 20 can be safer.
- Q Okay. And so when you got there, you saw an
- 22 individual in the driveway who was bleeding heavily
- 23 from an injury --
- 24 A Yes.
- 25 Q -- to his neck?

1	A Yes.
2	Q What else did you see?
3	A There were paramedic there was a
4	paramedic there trying to treat him. There was a
5	police officer there with him. I think it might have
6	been Officer Kristin Ford. And there was another
7	paramedic trying to get a gurney out of the ambulance.
8	Q Okay. And were they parked right in front
9	of the residence here or were they also staged farther
10	away or parked farther away?
11	A No. The ambulance would have been right at
12	the intersection of and Southeast and
13	Southeast Avenue.
14	Q Okay. Was your understanding that there
15	were other sergeants already on scene when you
16	arrived?
17	A Yes.
18	Q Who were they?
19	A I believe they were Sergeant Searle and
20	Sergeant Mooney and I believe they were in the house.
21	Q Okay. So did you go into the house
22	A I did not.
23	Q at that point?
24	A No.
25	Q And why not?

- 1 A There were already sergeants inside the
- 2 house. And our typical protocol on a critical
- 3 incident like that would be for a sergeant to be with
- 4 teams that need to be directly supervised.
- 5 And then -- and if -- the last sergeant that
- 6 arrives on scene will take more of a 1,000-foot view
- of the whole scene and try and coordinate as best we
- 8 can. Plus, I had a rapidly unfolding situation
- 9 outside with an injured person. And very quickly,
- 10 more injured people started coming out of the house.
- 11 Q Okay. And so did you kind of assume the
- role of coordinating the medical treatment, triaging,
- 13 getting additional medical resources there and that
- 14 sort of a role?
- 15 A Yes, I did.
- Okay. What happened then?
- 17 A Very shortly after I arrived on scene, I
- 18 heard two gunshots or what I believed to be gunshots.
- 19 And --
- 20 Q Could you tell where they came from?
- 21 A The direction of the house. Initially, I
- thought they might have been out back.
- 23 Q Oh, okay. But from the direction of the
- house?
- 25 A Yes.

1	Q	You	were	still	in	the	front?

- 2 A Yes. I was on the street, on Southeast
- 3 Street when I --
- 4 Q Okay. Okay. And what did you start
- 5 thinking at that point?
- 6 A I believed they had killed the man inside
- 7 the house.
- 8 0 Who had?
- 9 A The officers that were inside.
- 10 Q Okay. And so how did that change, if at
- all, your reaction to the incident and the scene
- 12 itself?
- 13 A As the sergeant on scene, it's -- it's a
- 14 horrifying thing to -- to know that they have just
- 15 killed somebody. However, it was also a relief to me
- 16 because I knew that the situation inside had probably
- 17 stabilized.
- 18 I was receiving more information before they
- 19 shot -- before I heard the gunshots that the man had a
- 20 knife, was refusing to drop it, things like that, so I
- 21 knew that the call had been moving up a notch.
- 22 Q What do you mean by that, "moving up a
- 23 notch"?
- 24 A The officers were -- had made contact with
- 25 him and I could tell from the radio broadcast that

- 1 they had. And I was fully expecting to hear the
- 2 gunshots. So to hear them was kind of a relief to me
- 3 'cause I knew it was over.
- I wasn't hearing that any officers were
- 5 injured. I heard that the suspect was down. And
- 6 then, for me anyway, I transitioned, at that point,
- 7 knowing that a shooting had happened in that -- in the
- 8 house, that I would be the incident commander for this
- 9 whole incident.
- 10 Q And why would you assume that role?
- 11 A Because the officers inside and sergeants
- inside would have been in close proximity to the
- shots. Whether they were inside or outside, I still
- 14 didn't know. I -- I eventually heard on the
- 15 radio that they were inside, but I believe that the
- 16 sergeants were -- would be in close proximity, if not
- 17 involved themselves.
- 18 And so it's not -- it's our protocol to --
- when people are involved in a deadly force incident,
- 20 either that they witnessed it or used deadly force,
- 21 that we try and get them out of the scene as quickly
- as possible so that they're not continuing to make
- decisions.
- 24 And especially in that sergeant role, we
- 25 need sergeants that can make as objective decisions as

- 1 possible without some of the subjectivity that would
- 2 be involved in having been involved in a critical
- 3 incident, so I took over the role of incident
- 4 commander.
- 5 Q Okay. And once you assumed that role, what
- 6 did that mean for you in terms of your
- 7 responsibilities?
- 8 A They're -- we have directives in the Police
- 9 Bureau that dictate what it is that the incident
- 10 commander does. There are certain notifications that
- 11 need to be made. The -- of course, the -- the
- 12 Homicide Division needs to be notified. I had a
- 13 conversation with Detective Law's supervisor,
- 14 explained the situation to her. So she --
- 15 O Is that Detective Sergeant Michele Hughes?
- 16 A That is.
- 17 Q Okay.
- 18 A Yes. And so she can get her team started.
- 19 It also involves notifications to our command staff.
- 20 It's a very serious incident. The chief takes --
- 21 takes that very seriously. She ended up coming to the
- 22 scene herself.
- 23 So we notified the chief's office. We make
- 24 other notifications to the Independent Police Review
- 25 Division so that -- or office so that they can come as

- 1 well and be part. Internal Affairs is notified. The
- 2 PIO is notified. There are a lot of people that are
- 3 notified.
- 4 Q What -- what does PIO stand for?
- 5 A The public information officer.
- 6 Q Okay.
- 7 A But, first and -- first and foremost, before
- 8 those people are notified, the scene needs to be
- 9 secured. And so that's going to be one of our -- one
- of our big things, is to secure the scene as best
- 11 we can.
- 12 'Cause there's evidence there that needs to
- be preserved, so that grand jurors and juries can hear
- that later. So that was the number one priority, was
- 15 to separate the officers from the scene, establish the
- 16 crime scene.
- 17 Then I started making those notifications
- 18 that we just talked about and coordinated additional
- officers to come to the scene to help us.
- 20 Q Okay. And when you say separating the
- officers, what do you mean by that?
- 22 A We have the officers -- take them -- remove
- 23 -- remove them from the situation as best we can.
- 24 Typically, we'll have them go sit in a police car with
- another officer, so that they're not by themselves

Examination of Brian Hughes

- 1 after being involved in a traumatic incident. And --
- 2 Q Now, are these the actual involved officers
- and witness officers or are you talking about every
- 4 officer that responded to the call?
- 5 A Just the involved officers and the witness
- 6 officer.
- 7 Q Okay.
- 8 A So separate them. Also tell them not to
- 9 talk about the incident, that they can talk about
- other things with their partner officer that's in the
- 11 car with them. And, generally, the partner that comes
- 12 to sit with them in the car is not involved in the
- incident and they can just kind of cool off a
- 14 little bit.
- 15 Q Okay. And did that happen in this case?
- 16 A It did.
- 17 Q Okay. And then I think you mentioned part
- 18 of your responsibility also was setting up and
- 19 establishing the crime scene?
- 20 A That's correct.
- 21 O And was that done in this case?
- 22 A It was.
- Q Okay. In terms of the medical response, how
- 24 were you involved in coordinating that?
- 25 A So after the shots happened, more people

Examination of Brian Hughes

74

1	started	coming	out	of	the	house	with	а	variety	<i>y</i> (of

- 2 injuries, several stabbed. A man was hit on the head,
- I believe with a hammer, I would later learn.
- We did not have enough ambulances. The --
- 5 the trick in a situation like this is to get medical
- 6 care to the people involved as quickly as possible.
- 7 But with the shots just having been fired, the medical
- 8 personnel are a little nervous to come into a scene,
- 9 so as the incident commander, I want to make the scene
- safe so that they can come in and do their job.
- 11 So I was working on that out in front of the
- 12 house and directing ambulances. A -- I coordinated
- 13 with the medical personnel to get more ambulances to
- the scene 'cause more people were coming out of the
- 15 house.
- We made a little triage point at the corner
- there at 132 and and got the most critical
- 18 patients to ambulances first. So kind of a lot
- 19 going on.
- 20 Q Yeah, okay. And then what about in terms of
- 21 rendering any medical aid to the individual that was
- 22 shot by police?
- 23 A So that's also important. It's a priority
- for the police to do that. I had heard on the radio
- 25 that one of the officers believed he was dead. And so

Examination of Brian Hughes

75

- 1 I didn't have enough ambulances and medical personnel
- 2 at the time to go to the man immediately.
- It was a priority for me, but I had people
- 4 that had head wounds and a stab wound to the neck.
- 5 The man with the stab wound to the neck, I thought he
- 6 would probably not make it, but I'm glad to hear that
- 7 he did.
- 8 O Mm-hmm.
- 9 A But, I mean, this how -- that's how -- how
- injured these people were. I mean, one, I think, was
- smashed on the head with a hammer. They were a mess.
- 12 And so getting -- getting those people --
- 13 Q I mean, did you believe these were life
- 14 threatening injuries?
- 15 A Yes, I did.
- 16 Q Okay. Ultimately, though, were you able to
- 17 get medical personnel in to examine the individual
- 18 that was in the house?
- 19 A I did.
- 20 Q Okay. And what was the result of that?
- 21 A They determined he was deceased.
- 22 Q Okay. And then did you continue to manage
- the crime scene and the incident in the manner you've
- 24 just described until detectives got on scene and took
- 25 over control?

```
Yes, I did.
 1
           Α
 2
                MR. JACKSON: Okay. That's all the
 3
      questions that I have. Do the grand jurors have any
 4
      questions?
 5
                I don't see any. Okay.
 6
                THE WITNESS: All right.
 7
                MR. JACKSON: Thank you very much.
 8
                THE WITNESS: Thank you, folks.
 9
                A GRAND JUROR: Thank you.
10
                (Recess taken, 12:02 p.m. - 12:03 p.m.)
11
                MR. JACKSON: Okay. I'm sorry. We had just
12
      gone off of the record. We're back on the record now.
      I think we've got our next witness ready.
13
14
                THE WITNESS: Hi.
15
    Was thereupon called as a witness; and, having been
16
    first duly sworn, was examined and testified as follows:
17
18
                           EXAMINATION
19
      BY MR. JACKSON:
20
                Okay. You can have a seat.
21
                And could you please state and spell your
22
      name.
23
           Α
                     A-m-b-e-r, S-t-e-v-e-n-s.
24
                Okay. And, Ms. how do you know
25
      Derrick Rogers?
```

- 1 A He is my fiance.
- 2 Q And how long have you been together
- 3 with him?
- 4 A Three-and-a-half years.
- 5 Q Okay. And do the two of you have a child
- 6 together?
- 7 A Yes.
- 8 Q And how old is the child?
- 9 A One and a half or 16 months, to be exact.
- 10 Q 16 months. Okay. And you said he's your
- 11 fiance?
- 12 A Yes.
- 13 Q So when are you guys getting married?
- 14 A We are planning to get married next year
- 15 during the fall.
- 16 Q Okay.
- 17 A There's not an exact date yet, so --
- 18 Q Okay. And do the two of you live together
- 19 with your child?
- 20 A Yes.
- 21 Q And where -- on April 29th of 2019, where
- were you folks living?
- 23 A We were living with his granny, his
- great-grandmother, in one of the rooms in the house.
- We were helping her try -- 'cause she had just gotten

- out of the hospital, so we were just trying to make
- 2 her comfortable and help her out around the house.
- 3 So, yeah.
- 4 Q Okay. And what's her name?
- 5 A Betty.
- 6 Q Is it Betty Littlejohn?
- 7 A Yes.
- 8 Q Okay. How long had you and Derrick and your
- 9 child been living there?
- 10 A Well, it would have been a month. It wasn't
- 11 very long 'cause we had just prior moved out of our
- 12 apartment.
- 13 Q Into the room in --
- 14 A Yeah. In --
- 15 Q -- Betty's house?
- 16 A Yes.
- 17 Q Okay. And is your child a boy or a girl?
- 18 A A girl.
- 19 Q It's a girl. Okay. And so you and Derrick
- 20 and your daughter lived in this room. Who else lived
- in the house?
- 22 A Betty, Delbert, and Jon lived in a trailer
- outside. And then Derrick's aunt, Lana, lived in the
- trailer in the front yard.
- Q Okay. And was Derrick related to all of

<pre>1 those people?</pre>

- 2 A Yes.
- 3 Q Do you know what the relation is?
- 4 A So Delbert's a cousin, granny is obviously
- 5 his great-grandmother, Jon is his great uncle and Lana
- 6 is his aunt.
- 7 Q Okay. And do you know a person named
- 8 Jeb Brock?
- 9 A Yes.
- 10 Q And how do you know him?
- 11 A He was a family member of Derrick. I only
- had known him two days prior as to what had happened.
- I didn't know him very well. I just, you know, knew
- that he was Derrick's family.
- 15 Q Okay. You met him for the first time a
- 16 couple of days before the incident happened?
- 17 A Yeah, maybe a day and a half.
- 18 Q Okay. When you first met Jeb Brock, did he
- 19 -- was he moving into the house or was he just
- 20 stopping by?
- 21 A No. At first, he was just stopping by to
- 22 see Betty and then he left that night. But then he
- came back the next day, the day before everything
- happened, and he was helping his dad, Jon, move out.
- 25 Q So Jon Brock is actually Jeb Brock's father?

1	A Yes.
2	Q Okay. And was there anything odd or out of
3	the ordinary about your interactions with Jeb Brock in
4	those days leading up to the incident?
5	A No. And that was the weird thing was the
6	day before everything happened, he was asking us what
7	we wanted for dinner. He was sitting in our bedroom
8	watching my fiance play video games and asking about
9	the video games. Like, he didn't give a distinct,
LO	like, almost vibe as to he was going to hurt somebody.
L1	Q Okay. Did you see him using any kind of
L2	drugs or alcohol?
L3	A No.
L4	Q And did he you hear him talking about
L5	doing any of those things?
L6	A No.
L7	Q Okay. And did he ever appear to be high to
L8	you or drunk?
L9	A I questioned it; but, you know, I because
20	our family well, my family is full of drug drug
21	addicts, so normally I would be able to point that
22	out, but I had a suspicion, but, you know, didn't
23	think too much of it.

Q Okay. It wasn't anything outwardly

25 obvious --

24

- 1 A Right.
- 2 Q -- about it? Okay. So, now, I want to take
- 3 you to the night of April 28th --
- 4 A Mm-hmm.
- 5 Q -- into the early morning of April 29th.
- 6 A Yeah.
- 7 Q Do you remember going to bed --
- 8 A Yes.
- 9 Q -- that night?
- 10 A Mm-hmm.
- 11 O And was Jeb Brock there?
- 12 A I had thought he had left. So that night, I
- thought he was gone. I didn't know he was staying the
- night, so -- 'cause I just went to bed and I didn't
- 15 think twice of it.
- 16 Q Do you remember about time it was you went
- to bed?
- 18 A It was 10 o'clock.
- 19 Q 10 o'clock. Okay.
- 20 A Yeah. I had to go to work the next morning,
- 21 so --
- 22 Q Okay. And who -- who was in the house, that
- you were aware of, when you went to bed?
- 24 A I was aware of Delbert, me, my daughter,
- Derrick and Granny. But I didn't know that Jon was

- 1 sleeping on the couch and I didn't know Jeb was in the
- 2 house, so --
- 3 Q Okay. And when you went to bed, did Derrick
- 4 and your daughter go to bed with you or --
- 5 A Yes.
- 6 Q -- did they stay up?
- 7 A Derrick stayed up, you know, a little bit
- 8 longer to 12:00; but, normally, when my daughter goes
- 9 to bed is when I go to bed. So she was already asleep
- 10 prior to me going to sleep. But Derrick only stayed
- 11 up for, like, maybe two hours and then went to bed
- 12 with me. So --
- Okay. After you went to sleep, what -- what
- do you next remember happening?
- 15 A I woke up and I heard banging and I thought
- it was just, you know, people fighting in the next
- 17 room. I thought there might have been a sparked
- 18 argument because it's common for our family to get
- into arguments and it escalates, sadly.
- 20 But I told Derrick to, you know, go break it
- 21 up 'cause he's normally the person in the middle that
- 22 always breaks up the fights. You know, the
- 23 peacekeeper. And --
- 24 Q And let me just jump in real quick. Were
- 25 there any of those kind of arguments or fights

- 1 happening between people in the house in the couple of
- 2 days leading up to --
- 3 A No.
- 4 0 -- this incident?
- 5 A No.
- 6 Q What about between Jeb Brock and any of the
- other occupants in the house, any fights or arguments
- 8 breaking out there?
- 9 A No. He would -- he seemed very quiet and he
- 10 would speak to people when they would speak to him,
- but, no, there was no arguing between anybody else or
- 12 anything.
- 13 Q Okay. And when you heard these sounds or
- 14 this commotion --
- A Mm-hmm.
- 16 Q -- did you have a sense of which room --
- 17 A Yes.
- 18 Q -- it was coming from?
- 19 A It was the room next to us, which is
- 20 Delbert's room 'cause we share a wall. So I knew it
- 21 was his room because I could hear the pounding against
- our wall. And my head is -- where our bed is
- positioned, my head is up against that wall, so I
- could easily hear it, so --
- Q Okay. And so you told Derrick, "Hey, go --

- go break it up"?
- 2 A Yeah.
- 3 Q And --
- 4 A Because I thought it was just a normal
- fight, you know? I was just, like, you know, "Go
- 6 break them up, go calm them down and " --
- 7 Q Mm-hmm.
- 8 A -- "go back to bed." Yeah.
- 9 Q Could you tell who was fighting at that
- 10 point?
- 11 A No. All I know, it was Delbert was because
- 12 I could hear, you know, Delbert kind of doing grunts
- 13 and stuff like that. I didn't know it was Jeb that
- 14 was fighting him.
- O Mm-hmm.
- 16 A But I did know it was Delbert because I
- 17 heard him scream out loud and stuff like that. And he
- 18 -- we called the police once we heard, "Help, he's
- 19 stabbing me." And that's how I knew it was Delbert,
- 20 so --
- 21 Q Okay. And had Derrick already gone to break
- 22 it up when you heard that or did you hear that before
- 23 Derrick had left the room?
- 24 A Derrick had already -- was, like, already,
- 25 like, at the door -- at our door. And then we heard

- it and that's when he immediately left the room.
- Q Okay.
- 3 A And the door was closed. So I didn't see
- 4 anything that was happening out in the hallway. I
- 5 could hear it, but I couldn't see anything.
- 6 Q Okay. And you said you called 9-1-1 --
- 7 A Yes.
- 8 Q -- at that point?
- 9 A Yeah.
- 10 Q All right.
- 11 A The moment I heard, "Help, I'm being
- stabbed, was when I called 9-1-1.
- Q Okay. When did you realize that Jeb Brock
- was involved in this?
- 15 A He came into our bedroom and was trying to
- 16 barricade himself in our bedroom.
- 17 Q So it wasn't until that point --
- 18 A Yeah.
- 19 Q -- that you realized he was even there?
- 20 A Yeah.
- 21 Q Okay.
- 22 A I didn't realize it was Jeb until he
- 23 actually came into the room.
- 24 Q So while you're -- before he came in, while
- you're in there, where was your daughter?

1 My daughter was asleep in her crib and her 2 crib was right next to the door. 3 Q Okay. 4 And it was right next to our bed, so --5 And if you look at this diagram we have up 6 here, is this the room that you and Derrick and your 7 daughter were in? 8 Yes. 9 And does this furniture and the way that 10 it's oriented --11 Α Yes. 12 -- look correct to you? Q 13 Α Yes. And so if the door is here and the bed is 14 0 here, where was the crib or the Pack 'n Play? 15 16 So the crib was positioned this way. 17 Q Okay. Her crib was literally right at the door. 18 Α 19 Right between the edge of the bed and the Q door? 20 21 Yeah. Α 22 Q Okay. And she was sleeping? 23 Α Yes. 24 What could you hear happening out there once

Derrick left the room and the door was closed?

25

1	A I heard screaming and yelling. I heard
2	screaming from Betty 'cause she walked out of the room
3	and she screamed. And, apparently, she went back into
4	her bedroom. And and then I heard, you know, just
5	continuously slamming of the door.
6	And I just heard a bunch of yelling. I
7	heard Derrick tell Delbert to run and then as I heard
8	that, Jeb was in our bedroom.
9	Q Okay. So the door was closed, so did Jeb
10	open the door
11	A Yes.
12	Q and come in? What did you see at that
13	moment?
14	A Jeb had a knife and a hammer in his hand.
15	He just walked into the room and kind of, you know,
16	was hurting himself. We he was trying to cut his
17	wrists and his neck. And he screamed at me to not
18	move and so I didn't. I laid on the bed and
19	Q Now, you said earlier that he was trying to
20	barricade the door or something
21	A Yeah.
22	Q like that. What what exactly was he
23	doing?
24	A He didn't barricade he didn't try to
25	barricade the door until well, he was trying to at

- first, but he didn't fully barricade the door until
- 2 after Derrick was stabbed, so --
- 3 Q Okay. And did you see that happen?
- 4 A Yes.
- 5 Q Could you describe for us how that occurred?
- 6 A So Derrick, like, used his shoulder 'cause
- 7 he's a big man. He pushed the door open and he was
- 8 screaming and Jeb was still trying to hurt himself at
- 9 this point, but he was trying to cut his neck over my
- 10 daughter's crib.
- 11 Q So Jeb's inside your room with you and your
- 12 daughter?
- 13 A Yes.
- 14 Q And was there anyone else in the room
- 15 with you?
- 16 A No.
- 17 Q Okay.
- 18 A And Derrick was pushing open the door and
- 19 the door was maybe a foot open. And he saw Jeb.
- 20 Apparently, Jeb hit him with the hammer as soon as
- 21 Derrick opened the door.
- Q Well, did you see that happen?
- 23 A Yes.
- 24 Q Okay. Where did he hit Derrick with the
- 25 hammer?

- 1 A In the face, in the nose.
- Q Okay.
- 3 A And I saw the blood start gushing. And then
- 4 he continued to try to say that he was going to kill
- 5 himself and then was cutting himself over my
- 6 daughter's crib again.
- 7 Q Jeb was doing that?
- 8 A Yes.
- 9 Q Okay.
- 10 A And Derrick screamed, "That's my baby,"
- 11 tried picking Dahlia up and as he was leaning in,
- 12 that's when he stabbed him.
- 13 O When Jeb Brock stabbed Derrick?
- 14 A Yes.
- 15 O Where did he stab him?
- 16 A In the neck. At first, I thought it was the
- 17 shoulder 'cause I couldn't really see it with only a
- 18 foot -- the foot of the door open, but I saw him stab
- 19 him closer to this region more towards his neck. And
- 20 -- and then when Derrick left the room, he lunged
- 21 outwards and stabbed him in the arm.
- 23 A Yes.
- 24 O Okay. And so after Derrick was stabbed in
- 25 the neck, did he back --

- 1 A Yeah.
- 2 Q -- out of the --
- 3 A He backed out of the room and he went to
- 4 turn and as Derrick was turning, Derrick -- Jeb leaned
- 5 out, like, maybe just his shoulder was out the door,
- 6 and stabbed Derrick in the arm.
- 7 Q Okay.
- 8 A I didn't see him physically stab him, but I
- 9 saw him leaning outside the door and moving his arm
- 10 like that.
- 11 Q In a stabbing motion?
- 12 A Yeah.
- Q Okay. Did you have a sense, at that point,
- of whether or not any of the other people in the house
- 15 were injured?
- 16 A Yes. I thought Delbert was injured. I
- 17 didn't think Granny was injured because all I heard
- 18 was her scream and then her door close. And so I just
- 19 knew that -- I didn't -- I wasn't aware of Jon being
- 20 hurt. I didn't find that out until the very end.
- 21 Q Okay.
- 22 A And -- but I did know that Delbert and
- 23 Derrick were hurt.
- 24 Q Okay. Did you have a sense of how serious
- 25 the injuries were to either of them at that point?

- 1 A No.
- Q Okay.
- 3 A Because after Derrick was stabbed, he -- we
- 4 have a bookcase behind our -- not a bookcase, but a
- 5 case where we have all of our clothes in behind our
- 6 door and he slammed it against our door.
- 7 Q Jeb did?
- 8 A Yes.
- 9 Q Okay. And what was your sense of why he was
- 10 doing that?
- 11 A Barricading himself.
- 12 Q And was your daughter still in the room at
- 13 that point?
- 14 A Yeah, she was screaming.
- Okay. So she was awake now?
- 16 A Yeah. She was awake when Derrick was
- 17 yelling for her to grab her. And, yeah, she was
- 18 screaming throughout the whole time until I -- until
- 19 Jeb told me -- went over to my -- the bed and told me
- 20 to lay down. And then I think she calmed down, but I
- 21 don't recollect if she went back to sleep or if she
- 22 was still awake.
- Q Okay. Now, you said when Derrick first left
- the room, you called 9-1-1?
- 25 A Yeah. I had called 9-1-1 when he had first

- 1 left the room to go see what was happening?
- 2 Q Wait -- with Delbert?
- 3 A Yes.
- 4 Q And was that call on a cell phone or a
- 5 landline?
- 6 A It was my cell phone.
- 7 Q Okay. And as this kind of sequence of
- 8 events you've just described is happening, were you
- 9 still on with 9-1-1?
- 10 A Yes. I was screaming into the phone for
- 11 help. They were trying to ask me questions, but I was
- just continually screaming, like, "Please help me,"
- 13 because, at that point, Jeb was in the room, 'cause
- 14 the moment -- I was calm answering their questions
- 15 when Derrick was out in the hallway. But the moment
- Jeb walked into the room was when I started screaming.
- 17 Q Mm-hmm. Okay. You said at -- after he
- 18 moved that piece of furniture --
- A Mm-hmm.
- 20 Q -- toward the door, he told you to lay down
- 21 on the bed?
- 22 A Yes.
- 23 Q Did he still have the hammer and the knife?
- 24 A The hammer was gone, but he still had the
- 25 knife.

1	Q Okay. Did you know where the hammer went?
2	A No.
3	Q Okay. But you couldn't see it anymore, at
4	least weren't seeing it?
5	A Yeah, I wasn't seeing it. All I remember
6	was he hit Derrick in the face with a hammer and then
7	the hammer was no longer with him and he only had the
8	knife.
9	Q Okay. And did you recognize the knife or
10	where it may have come from?
11	A Yes. It was a kitchen knife that was
12	actually out of one of Granny's Betty she has a
13	knife block in her kitchen and I knew exactly what
14	knife it was. It was the butcher knife.
15	Q Okay. What happened then?
16	A He told me to lay down. He grabbed my
17	breasts hard, you know? He had shoved his hand down
18	my shirt and he still had the knife in his hand
19	throughout the whole time.
20	He as he was groping me on the breast, he
21	bit me very, very hard on the cheek. And I didn't
22	realize it until after that it was bleeding. And
23	then, at that time, he ripped off my pants and was
24	trying to penetrate me, but couldn't.

He wasn't -- he couldn't get an erection to

25

- 1 penetrate me and so he forcibly made me perform oral
- on him. And after that, when he still couldn't, he
- 3 tried to get back on top of me again, but he wasn't
- 4 trying to penetrate me. He was actually laying on top
- of me trying to slice his neck open.
- 6 O So he still had the knife in his hand
- 7 through all --
- 8 A Yeah.
- 9 Q -- of that?
- 10 A He was laying on top of me and trying to
- 11 slice his neck. And then after he couldn't do that,
- he forced me to get on top of him to proceed having
- 13 sex. And then maybe five minutes being on top of
- 14 him -- he still hadn't penetrated me -- I heard the
- 15 police come into our house, so --
- 16 Q Okay. And when he first told you to lay
- 17 down, did he say anything about what he wanted to do
- or what he wanted you to do?
- 19 A Well, he said, "Take off my pants," and at
- 20 first -- at first, I said -- I was just in shock, so I
- 21 didn't do anything. And that's when he ripped them
- 22 off. And as he was trying to get on top of me, he
- said it was either me or my daughter, so --
- 24 Q Okay. And he still had the knife at that
- 25 point?

- 1 A Yes.
- 2 Q Do you remember what pants and underwear you
- 3 were wearing?
- 4 A I think I was wearing gray leggings. And I
- 5 think the underwear were pink.
- 6 Q Okay.
- 7 A But I -- I don't remember, to be honest.
- 8 Q Okay. And did you have, like, a shirt on or
- 9 some --
- 10 A Yes. I had a tank top on and I was wearing
- 11 a bra, so it wasn't like a wire bra. It was like a
- 12 sports bra.
- Q Okay. And were those clothing items
- 14 removed?
- 15 A No. The only things were removed was my
- 16 pants and my underwear.
- 17 Q Okay.
- 18 A My shirt and my bra stayed on.
- 19 Q Okay. And did he take any of his clothes
- 20 off?
- 21 A No. He just pulled down his pants to, like,
- the mid of his legs, you know?
- Q Yeah.
- 24 A It wasn't, like, all the way off. It was
- 25 just down.

```
1
                 Okay. Okay. While this is happening, was
 2
       he saying anything else to you?
 3
            Α
                 He just kept on repeating that, "I wanted to
      kill myself."
 4
 5
                 That he --
            Q
 6
            A
                That's all.
 7
                -- he wanted to kill --
            Q
 8
            Α
                 Yes.
 9
                -- himself?
            0
10
                 That he wanted to kill himself.
            Α
11
                 Okay.
            Q
12
                 Or he would also say, "Don't move," or told
      me to lay down. Those were the only -- really, the
13
       three things that he told me. He didn't say anything
14
       else besides the me or my daughter part.
15
16
            Q
                 Okay.
17
            Α
                 So --
18
            Q
                 Okay. And so once he had forced you to
      perform oral sex on him and then --
19
20
            Α
                 Yeah.
21
                 -- laid back and had you get on top of
22
      him --
23
            Α
                 Yeah.
24
                -- you said you heard the police come into
```

25

the house?

- 1 A Yes.
- 2 Q What did you actually hear? Or how did you
- 3 know --
- 4 A I heard --
- 5 Q -- they were police?
- 6 A I heard the sirens 'cause the -- the window
- 7 was open and I heard the sirens coming. And that was
- 8 how I knew that the police were coming.
- 9 And then I heard voices from the living room
- saying, "Please let yourself be known." You know how
- when cops walk in, they say, "Please let themselves be
- 12 known. We are armed. If anybody is here, please
- tell us." And, at first, I was scared to say anything
- 14 because I didn't know if Jeb was going to hurt me.
- O Mm-hmm.
- A And I had gotten off of top of him and the
- 17 moment I -- 'cause they kept on repeating it, "Let us
- 18 know if you're here." And the last time around when
- 19 they were getting closer to the door is when I
- 20 screamed, "I'm in here. Please help me."
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 22 A And that's when Jeb pulled me in front of
- 23 him and then held the knife to my throat.
- Q Okay. And, to that point, had he used the
- 25 knife against you in any way?

- 1 A No.
- 2 Q He just had it in his hand?
- 3 A Yeah. Any -- yeah. Before all of it,
- 4 before he had put the physical knife to my throat, he
- 5 had never touched me with the knife.
- 6 Q Okay. But he didn't, like, set it down or
- 7 anything --
- 8 A No.
- 9 like that as far as you know?
- 10 A No, not that I know of. It was still in his
- 11 hand throughout the whole thing.
- 12 Q Okay. So once the police get closer to the
- door or sound like they're getting closer to the door
- 14 and you scream out --
- 15 A Right.
- 16 Q -- he grabbed you?
- 17 A Yeah. He grabbed me in front of him, like,
- 18 almost --
- 19 Q Okay.
- 20 A -- like a shield. And we were laying on our
- 21 sides on the bed. And he had the knife to my throat
- 22 to the point where I could feel the blade. It wasn't
- just, you know, next to my throat. It was on my
- throat and he was slowly trying to press into it.
- Q Mm-hmm.

1	A And that's when the police came into the
2	room. And I was at that time, I was trying to push
3	Jeb's hand away, the hand with the knife away from my
4	neck so 'cause I didn't hold it against them that
5	if I didn't try to push it away, that he was just
6	going to kill me, so
7	Q You you thought that's what would happen?
8	A Yeah. If I didn't try to, you know, push
9	the knife away, I thought he was just going to kill
10	me, so
11	Q Okay. Did you actually grab the knife with
12	your hand?
13	A Yes. I pushed the blade up with my palm and
14	then, at one point while the police were still in the
15	room, I had it almost in my teeth.
16	Like, the blade 'cause he like, I had
17	shoved it upwards, but he kept on trying to press it
18	down and I didn't want him to cut my neck. And so, at
19	one point, I had the blade of the knife between my
20	teeth.
21	Q Okay.
22	A So
23	Q Was he saying anything at this point?
24	A He was telling the police officers at first
25	that he was going to kill himself. And then he said

1	to the police officers that if they didn't back up,
2	that he was going to kill me. And I don't remember
3	him saying anything else besides that, so
4	Q Was your daughter still in the room?
5	A When the police entered, they picked my
6	daughter up at first because I remember the police
7	officer saying, "There's a baby in the room," and
8	somebody had I didn't see them because the lights
9	were in my eyes, but somebody had picken [sic] up my
10	daughter and took her out into the living room.
11	Q Okay. Okay. How was Jeb holding you, like,
12	keeping you in front of him?
13	A He was like this, you know? Like, almost
14	like a hug. And his arm was over my chest and then
15	his other arm had the knife and it was towards my
16	neck. And he had his legs almost wrapped around me
17	tight, so I couldn't, you know, budge or kick. And,
18	yeah.
19	Q Okay. When the officers when the door
20	opened and you could see the police officers there
21	A Yeah.
22	Q you said the lights were in your eyes.
23	A Mm-hmm.
24	Q Was that police lights or was it
25	A Yeah.

- 1 Q -- overhead lights or --
- 2 A It was the police. It was the police lights
- 3 shining their flashlights into the room.
- 4 Q Okay. Were the lights on in the room or was
- 5 it dark?
- 6 A No, it was dark.
- 7 Q Okay. And, you know, this is, like, the
- 8 middle of the night, right? So --
- 9 A Right. It was, like, 3 o'clock or 4 o'clock
- in the morning --
- 11 Q Okay.
- 12 A -- between that time.
- 13 Q And is there a lot of ambient light? Are
- there bright streetlights outside or anything like
- that or was the room really, like --
- 16 A It --
- 18 A It wasn't "dark" dark. Like, I could still
- make out people's faces and knew -- see things. It
- wasn't, like, completely dark. There was a small
- ambience of light, but, yeah.
- 22 Q Okay. Did you hear the police say anything
- once they had come in?
- 24 A When they had come in, they -- like I said,
- 25 they said that there was a baby in the room.

- 1 Q Mm-hmm.
- 2 A And so they took her out. And then I heard
- 3 them trying to convince Jeb to let me go by saying,
- 4 you know, "You don't have to do this. You can just
- let her go. You can fix this, you know, trying to be
- 6 compliant in a way. But that's when -- as they were
- 7 saying that, Jeb was saying that he was going to kill
- 8 himself. And so, yeah.
- 9 O Okay. And is that also when he was
- 10 threatening to kill you --
- 11 A Yes.
- 12 Q -- if they didn't back up?
- 13 A Yeah.
- 14 Q Okay. And how did the police respond to
- that when he was saying those things?
- 16 A They -- you know, they had their guns drawn.
- 17 They weren't -- they were obviously trying to get Jeb
- just to let me go. And they weren't initially trying
- 19 to just, you know, off the bat kill him, so --
- 20 Q Okay. As they're trying to -- to talk to
- Jeb, did he let you go?
- 22 A No. I was still fighting the knife away
- 23 from my neck at that --
- 24 Q Okay.
- 25 A -- time. And I was screaming at the police

- 1 to help me. And I just kept on saying, "Please,
- please, just help me."
- 3 Q Mm-hmm.
- 4 A So --
- 5 Q Okay. How did this ultimately end, this
- 6 kind of stand off that you're describing?
- 7 A So I was shot with a non-lethal in the
- 8 stomach because, at first when the police came in, the
- 9 door was only a foot open because it was still
- somewhat barricaded. And they shot me with a
- 11 non-lethal 'cause I don't think they realized that I
- was, you know, being held as a human shield.
- 13 They were just trying to shoot him and make
- 14 him, you know, drop me. And so I was first shot with
- 15 the non-lethal and I thought I had gotten shot with a
- bullet because I could smell the sulfur in the air.
- 17 But --
- 18 Q Where did it hit you?
- 19 A Right in the stomach right here.
- 20 Q Okay. And you thought -- you thought you
- 21 were actually shot by a bullet?
- 22 A Yeah. 'Cause, you know, I didn't think of
- the non-lethals at the time. I just thought -- I
- 24 could smell the sulfur in the air and I got hit with
- 25 something and it -- since the adrenaline was going

- 1 through me so much, all I could felt was it hit me and
- then it being warm across my stomach.
- 3 So I thought the warmth was blood. And so
- 4 I -- just my first initial thought was, I just got
- 5 shot. So --
- 6 Q Okay. And what did you do?
- 7 A I screamed, "I got shot, I got shot." They
- 8 had came in. They were still trying to convince Jeb
- 9 to let me go and then when they realized that he
- 10 didn't let me go, that he wasn't going to let me go, I
- 11 remember looking down a little bit. Like, my neck was
- 12 like this. And I remember, like, drifting my eyes
- downwards towards my legs.
- 14 And I saw him get shot in the leg. And
- that's when I felt the initial, like, him letting me
- go, you know? Like, I could feel him release me.
- 17 And I immediately jumped up and I turned
- 18 around and I saw Jeb still trying -- you know, lunging
- 19 almost. And then I heard a gunshot. And then my ear
- 20 was ringing and I -- at that initial moment when I
- 21 first heard the first gunshot, I turned around towards
- 22 that couch --
- Q Okay.
- 24 A -- and had my head down, covered my ears and
- 25 I heard the second shot.

- 1 Q Okay. When did you realize that you weren't
- 2 shot with a bullet, that you were actually shot with a
- 3 less lethal munition round?
- 4 A They had tooken [sic] me out of the room.
- 5 I --
- 6 Q Oh. So it wasn't until --
- 7 A Yeah.
- 9 A It wasn't until --
- 10 Q -- the way outside?
- 11 A -- I was in -- out of the room and in the
- 12 living room.
- 13 Q Okay.
- 14 A Because I -- when I got up from the last
- 15 shot, I remember turning around and seeing Jeb die.
- 16 Like, I knew he was dying.
- 17 And since the officers -- since it was a
- 18 tight space, there was, like, three officers in the
- 19 room, I couldn't get through at first. And so one of
- 20 the officers lifted me over the couch and into the
- 21 hallway. And all I remember was seeing that there was
- 22 blood trailed through the house.
- 23 Q Okay.
- 24 A And I walked out into the living room and
- that's when I could somewhat start feeling the pain.

- 1 Like, it wasn't the full pain, but I could somewhat
- 2 feel the pain of my stomach.
- 3 And I lifted up my tank top and saw that
- 4 there was an abrasion on my stomach. And it was
- 5 almost, like, you know, road rash, or, like, a scab.
- 6 And it was big. And it was bleeding, you know. It
- 7 was -- not profusely, but it was starting to bleed.
- 8 Q Mm-hmm.
- 9 A And I just put my shirt back down and asked
- 10 the officer if I could get my daughter a bottle of
- 11 milk because I knew that my daughter was freaking out
- in the living room 'cause I could hear her.
- 13 And I try -- got her a bottle of milk as
- quickly as I could, but I couldn't find the top of it.
- 15 And so they just told me to set it down on the
- 16 counter. And that's when they walked me out of the
- 17 house.
- 18 Q Okay. And were you bleeding from any of the
- injuries to your hands when you were grabbing the
- 20 knife?
- 21 A Yes. I was mainly bleeding from my fingers.
- 22 O Okay.
- 23 A And I hadn't noticed that until I was also
- 24 out in the living room because I had looked down and
- 25 seen that my whole hand was drenched in blood. So --

```
yeah.
 1
                 Okay. You said that while you were still
 2
 3
       with -- while Jeb was still holding onto you --
 4
            Α
                 Mm-hmm.
 5
                 -- you kind of looked down toward your
 6
       legs --
 7
            Α
                 Yeah.
 8
                 -- and you saw him get shot --
            Q
 9
            Α
                 Yeah.
10
                 -- in the leq --
            0
11
                 I remember --
            Α
12
            Q
                 -- or some --
                 -- seeing his pants almost, like, blow up,
13
       you know? Like, if you get -- like, if you shot
14
       something, like a piece of fabric, and it kind of
15
16
       frays almost. I saw the initial fray.
                 I didn't see any blood. All I just saw was
17
18
       his pants frayed and I saw it, like, you know --
       obviously, he got hit. So I didn't see any blood or
19
20
       anything like that. I just knew that he was shot in
21
       the leg and he released me.
22
            Q
                 Okay. And you didn't have a sense of what
23
       he was shot with? You just saw --
24
            Α
                 No.
```

25

Q

-- something --

```
I just --
 1
            Α
                 -- hit him?
 2
 3
            Α
                 Yeah. But I kind of figured it was a bullet
 4
       considering, you know, non-lethals don't penetrate the
       skin like that. And so, like, I knew that since I
 5
 6
       could see almost, like, the hole of -- in his pants,
 7
       that I knew that he was shot with a bullet, I'm pretty
 8
       sure.
 9
                 But, you know, I didn't see if it was a
       non-lethal or not a non-lethal. I just assumed that
10
11
      he was shot with a bullet because his pants, you
12
       know --
13
                 Because of what you saw?
            0
14
            Α
                 Yeah.
15
                 Okay. And when you said you felt his grip
       kind of relax and you --
16
17
            Α
                 Yeah.
                 -- were able to get up, if you look at this
18
19
       diagram up here --
20
                 Mm-hmm.
            Α
21
                 -- the two of you were laying in the bed
22
       kind of like this?
23
            Α
                 Yes.
24
            Q
                 With your head --
                 Yeah, against --
25
            Α
```

-- where the pillows --1 Q -- the pillows. 2 Α 3 Q -- are in this diagram? Mm-hmm. 4 Α Okay. When the officers came into the room, 5 6 you said there were three of them? 7 Yeah. Α And --8 9 And I know that there was more behind them. 10 There was two that was standing by the doorway in the 11 hallway almost, but three officers were actually 12 inside the room. Okay. And when you jumped up, where did --13 where, in the room, did you jump up to? 14 I jumped up by the edge of the bed and when 15 16 I heard the second shot go off, I was standing right 17 at the edge of this couch. 18 0 Okay. And, as you said, it's a pretty right 19 space --20 Yeah. Α 21 -- in here. I mean, were you, like, right 22 next to the officers? 23 Α Somewhat. I was maybe a foot apart from the

officers because one was standing at this armrest

24

25

right here.

1 (О	Mm-hmm.

- 2 A And I was standing more towards the -- the
- 3 couch cushion at that time. So I didn't get closer to
- 4 them until they were trying to take me out of
- 5 the room.
- 6 Q Okay. And so were they kind of positioned
- 7 coming into the room, like, one, two, three, from
- 8 the door?
- 9 A Yeah. It was more of like -- there was one
- right here, two behind him, and then three cops were,
- like, more towards out the door and in the hallway.
- 12 Q Okay. And you said you heard the first
- shot, you were down toward the corner of the bed. And
- 14 then --
- 15 A Yeah. And I could -- my ears started
- 16 ringing.
- 17 O Yeah.
- 18 A And I was still standing at that point, but
- 19 after I heard the first initial shot, that's when I
- 20 ducked down, covered my ears and that's when the
- 21 second shot went off.
- 22 Q Okay. Did Jeb still have the knife in his
- hand when those things were happening?
- A When he was shot, yes.
- Q Okay. You said that when you spun around to

- look at him, it almost looked like he was lunging or
- 2 making some kind of movement like that. What -- could
- 3 you describe --
- 4 A Yeah. He was --
- 5 Q -- what you actually --
- 6 A -- trying to --
- 7 O -- saw?
- 8 A -- like, almost get up, you know? Like,
- 9 'cause he was laying on his side, so he was trying to,
- 10 like, get up and sit almost. Like, it looked like he
- 11 was kind of, like, more towards going towards the cop
- then, like, you know, actually just sitting up, but it
- looked like he was trying to get up. So --
- 14 O Okay. But he was moving toward the
- 15 officers --
- 16 A Yes.
- 17 O -- in the direction of the officers?
- 18 A He was, like, doing more of, like, a
- 19 lunging-type movement more than just, you know, how
- you would normally sit up from a bed.
- 21 Q Okay. And where was the knife when he was
- doing that?
- 23 A I'm sure it was still in his hand.
- Q Okay. Could you actually see, like, how he
- 25 was holding it or --

- 1 A He was still holding it like this or it was
- 2 -- if it was, you know, in a stabbing motion.
- 3 Q With the blade coming out the bottom of his
- 4 hand?
- 5 A Yeah, like this.
- 6 Q Okay. And do you remember which hand it
- 7 was in?
- 8 A I'm pretty sure it was in his right.
- 9 Q In his right hand?
- 10 A Mm-hmm.
- 11 Q Okay. You said early -- early on in this,
- 12 he actually ripped off your pants --
- A Mm-hmm.
- 14 Q -- and underwear. Were you able to get some
- shorts or pants on?
- 16 A Yeah. As I -- as the last initial shot went
- 17 off and I knew that he was dead, I -- there was
- 18 clothes on the couch and so I grabbed, you know, the
- 19 closest pair of shorts. Grabbed it, grabbed my purse,
- 20 which is a Nike backpack that had all of -- my wallet,
- 21 you know, just a couple of things.
- 22 And I grabbed those two things. I put on
- the shorts in the room, grabbed my backpack, climbed
- over the couch. The officer helped me climb over the
- 25 couch and got out of the room.

Okay. When you got out into that living 1 2 room area -- or is that where you went, into the 3 living --4 Α Yeah. 5 Q -- room area? 6 Α I went into the living room. 7 What did you see when you got there? Q I remember when I first walked out of the 8 9 bedroom, I could just see a -- a -- a large trail of 10 blood from the hallway to the living room, somewhat in the kitchen, but not very much, you know? Like, it 11 was more the hallway, living room. 12 13 0 Okay. 14 Α So --15 Who was in the living room when you got out Q 16 there? 17 Α Granny, Grandma Betty, and Jon. And Jon, I -- that was when I realized Jon was also hurt --18 19 Q Mm-hmm. 20 -- because he was sitting on the couch 21 groaning in pain saying, "I'm hurt, I'm hurt." I 22 could see the blood trickling down his face and so --23 and then my daughter was sitting with Betty. 24 Q Okay. And was your daughter hurt? 25 No. Luckily, no. Α

1	Q And did you see any injuries to Betty?
2	A No.
3	Q Okay. Were there other police officers in
4	that living room area as well or
5	A One the police officer that shot me with
6	the non-lethal was standing at the kitchen table. And
7	the officer that was guiding me through the house was
8	a woman and she was really the only other officer that
9	was kind of towards out in the living room. The rest
10	were in, like, more the hallway towards the bedrooms.
11	So
12	Q Okay. And then did you end up coming out
13	the front door?
14	A Yes.
15	Q And what did you see when you got out there?
16	A I didn't see it, but I remember the officer
17	telling me to watch out because there was blood. And
18	I didn't realize that Derrick Derrick was severely
19	stabbed at that point, so I didn't know whose blood
20	it was.
21	Q Mm-hmm.
22	A And so I didn't realize that there was
23	actually a large puddle of blood sitting in the
24	driveway. But when I got to the end of the driveway,
25	I could see Derrick's aunt screaming with another

```
Is that --
 1
           Q
              -- officer.
 2
           Α
 3
           Q
                -- Lana?
 4
           Α
                 Yeah.
 5
           Q
                 Okay.
 6
           Α
                 She was screaming and she was asking me what
      happened, "Where's Dahlia and is Dahlia fine?" And I
 7
       just told her, "Please, just go get Dahlia. I'll be
 8
 9
       okay. I don't know what's happening." And that's
10
      when the officer guided me to the ambulances.
11
                And did you go to the hospital?
           0
12
                 Yes.
                 MR. JACKSON: Okay. I think that's all the
13
       questions I have. Do the grand jurors have any
14
      questions?
15
                 A GRAND JUROR: You said that he was trying
16
      to cut his wrists and his --
17
18
                 THE WITNESS: Yeah.
19
                 A GRAND JUROR: -- throat.
20
                 THE WITNESS: He was --
21
                 A GRAND JUROR: Was he severely cut?
22
                 THE WITNESS: Not really. You know, because
23
       the body's natural reaction when you're trying to hurt
24
       themselves is to give off receptors to not do that.
25
                 A GRAND JUROR: To not do it, yeah.
```

1	THE WITNESS: And so like, I could
2	obviously see where he was doing the little cuts; but,
3	like, there was nothing major where it was just
4	profusely
5	A GRAND JUROR: Yeah.
6	THE WITNESS: bleeding.
7	A GRAND JUROR: And just to make sure I'm
8	clear.
9	THE WITNESS: Mm-hmm.
LO	A GRAND JUROR: You did see him get shot
L1	once
L2	THE WITNESS: Yes.
L3	A GRAND JUROR: and you turned around and
L4	then just heard the second one?
L5	THE WITNESS: I didn't see the second one.
L6	I was
L7	A GRAND JUROR: You saw the first one.
L8	THE WITNESS: crouched down, but I did
L9	see the first shot.
20	A GRAND JUROR: Do you remember where he got
21	shot? Was there any noticeable location?
22	THE WITNESS: I saw it more towards his
23	stomach and rib cage, so
24	A GRAND JUROR: Do you remember how far away
25	you were when he got ghot from him?

1	THE WITNESS: I was maybe two feet away from
2	the bed where he was laying on, so maybe three
3	A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
4	THE WITNESS: or four feet away from
5	him
6	A GRAND JUROR: All right.
7	THE WITNESS: himself. So
8	A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
9	MR. JACKSON: Any other questions? Okay. I
10	don't see any.
11	Thank you
12	A GRAND JUROR: Thank you
13	MR. JACKSON: very much.
14	A GRAND JUROR: very much.
15	THE WITNESS: Okay. Yeah, (indiscernible).
16	Thank you, guys.
17	MULTIPLE GRAND JURORS: Thank you.
18	MR. JACKSON: That's okay. If you could
19	stand right here and raise your right hand, we'll
20	swear you in.
21	DERRICK VINCENT ROGERS
22	Was thereupon called as a witness; and, having been
23	first duly sworn, was examined and testified as follows:
24	////
25	////

```
1
                            EXAMINATION
 2
       BY MR. JACKSON:
 3
            Q
                 Okay. You can have a seat.
 4
                 Thank you.
 5
                 And I just noticed your voice is very soft.
 6
       Is that --
 7
            Α
                 Yes.
 8
                 -- because of the injury?
 9
                 Yeah. I just -- I can clear it up a little
      bit, but it -- it hurts the more I talk. Like, it
10
11
       gets just gruffer and gruffer as I'm talking, so --
12
            Q
                 Okay.
                 -- it just -- I don't know. It's just
13
       coping like my -- my throat just normally does, it's
14
       this comfortable way to talk.
15
16
                 Okay. Well, so we've got a microphone on
            Q
17
       the --
18
            Α
                 Oh, okay.
                -- table there --
19
            Q
20
                 I see it.
            Α
21
                 -- and we're recording the proceedings.
            Q
22
       So --
                 Just kind of talk --
23
            Α
               -- if you could just --
24
            Q
25
            Α
                -- into it?
```

- 1 Q -- kind of talk into it --
- 2 A Talk into it?
- 3 Q -- that'd be --
- 4 A Okay. Perfect.
- 5 Q Thank you. Okay. And if you could please
- 6 state and spell your name.
- 7 A My name is Derrick Rogers, D-e-r-r-i-c-k,
- 8 R-o-g-e-r-s. And the middle name is Vincent,
- 9 V-i-n-c-e-n-t.
- 10 Q All right. And how do you know Betty
- 11 Littlejohn?
- 12 A Betty Littlejohn is my great-grandma.
- Q Okay. And
- 14 A That is my fiance.
- 15 Q And do you have a daughter with her?
- 16 A Yes, sir.
- 17 Q And how old is your daughter?
- 18 A She's about a year, year and a half almost.
- 19 Q Okay. And on April 29th of 2019, were you
- 20 living with and your daughter in Betty
- 21 Littlejohn's house?
- 22 A Yes, sir.
- Q Okay. And who else was living in the house
- 24 at that time?
- A My uncle, Jon; my cousin, Delbert; my

- 1 grandma and then that was it.
- Q Okay.
- 3 A Just me and my girlfriend and my daughter
- 4 and then them three.
- 5 Q Okay. And how long had you been living
- 6 there at that time?
- 7 A Oh, it was a couple months. I want to say
- 8 three-ish months, two-ish months. I'm not -- I'm not
- 9 really sure, you know, off the top of my head.
- 10 Q Okay. But it wasn't, like, years?
- 11 A No, no, definitely --
- 12 Q It was a shorter period?
- 13 A Yeah, definitely shorter period of time.
- 14 Q Okay.
- 15 A Yes.
- 16 Q And if you look up on the board here, we
- 17 have a diagram of the house. Is this -- that corner
- 18 bedroom the one you and and your daughter were
- 19 staying in?
- 20 A Yes, yes. And that was the back bedroom
- 21 that -- yeah. Yeah, you have that all correct.
- 22 Q Okay.
- 23 A Yeah.
- 24 Q Great. So -- and how do you know Jeb Brock?
- 25 A I hadn't seen Jeb in years, probably

- ten-plus years. I hadn't seen him -- the last time I
- seen him, I think I was a little child, like, maybe
- 3 five, six years old. I'm now 20 -- 23, 24, so -- and
- 4 my uncle actually has two sons -- I believe, two sons
- 5 that are both around about the same age. I think the
- 6 other one's about my age, to be honest with you. I
- 7 think Jeb's a little bit older.
- 8 Q Okay.
- 9 A So I had no clue that this would -- you know
- 10 what I mean? I had -- I had no -- that this would --
- 11 I had no fucking clue.
- 12 Q Okay.
- 13 A So --
- 14 Q You didn't really know Jeb very well --
- 15 A No.
- 16 Q -- then?
- 17 A No, not at all. Not -- I -- I mean, I had
- 18 played with him maybe when I was a child; but past
- 19 that, I've never seen him, not heard of him.
- 20 Q Okay.
- 21 A Not one time.
- 22 Q While you were living at Betty Littlejohn's
- 23 house, did Jeb show up?
- 24 A Yes. Yes, he did.
- Q Okay. And when did that happen?

- 1 A It was over the weekend. And I'm not sure
- 2 the exact date, but he -- he had came and I believe
- 3 that he just came for the day to help my uncle 'cause
- 4 he was being kicked out at the time. So they were
- 5 helping him move --
- 6 Q Is that your --
- 7 A -- all of --
- 8 O -- Uncle Jon?
- 9 A Yeah, my uncle, Jon, yeah. They were --
- 10 Q Okay.
- 11 A -- moving all of the -- his tools from,
- like, outside to the inside so they wouldn't get
- rained on when they came to do, like, a -- they're --
- they're charging my grandma, like, \$500 for all of the
- 15 garbage that's on the lawn and stuff, all of the stuff
- that's not supposed to be outside. So he was coming
- 17 to help him clean it up.
- 18 Q Jeb was?
- 19 A Jeb was. I believe so, yes.
- 20 Q Okay. All right.
- 21 A 'Cause they were out -- outside all -- all
- day, you know, cleaning, moving the big refrigerator
- that was out back and all that stuff. So it was, you
- 24 know -- you know, you didn't think nothing of it. He
- even came into my room and was, you know, talking

- 1 normally.
- Like, he sat down, asked me if I could -- he
- 3 could sit in my chair while I was sitting on the bed,
- 4 was getting -- getting high with me and was stoned,
- just smoking weed. You know, asked me for a dab.
- 6 Furthermore, was, you know, asking, "Hey, what are we
- 7 having for dinner?" Offering to buy, you know,
- 8 dessert, stuff like that. It was -- it was completely
- 9 just -- just -- I -- it was crazy.
- 10 O Mm-hmm.
- 11 A Out of the normal. Not -- it was just nuts.
- 12 It -- there's -- there's no way I could ever tell --
- 13 you know what I mean -- told that he was going to go
- hard and mass -- try to mass murder my whole family,
- 15 you know what I mean? So --
- 16 Q Okay. So nothing out of the ordinary or
- weird about your interactions?
- 18 A No.
- 19 Q And it was, like, a couple of days?
- 20 A Yeah. So he was -- he was there, but I
- 21 don't believe he stayed that night. Like I said, I
- 22 wasn't -- it was a normal interaction, so I didn't go
- out of my way to, you know, think that he's family.
- 24 You know, I didn't expect any of this to happen, so --
- Q Mm-hmm.

- 1 A Yeah. I believe that he left for that night
- or what I was told, that he's -- that he left for that
- 3 night and then had come back the next day. And I
- 4 believe the next day is when he had --
- 5 Q Okay.
- 6 A -- went -- went crazy and stabbed everyone.
- 7 Q Okay. So let's take you to that night --
- 8 A Yeah.
- 9 then, April 28th into the early morning
- 10 hours of April 29th.
- 11 A Yeah.
- 12 Q Does that sound right?
- 13 A Yeah, that sounds right.
- Q Do you remember what time you went to bed?
- 15 A It was around 10:30, 11 o'clock.
- 16 Q Okay.
- 17 A I just got done playing my video game,
- 18 played World of Warcraft and just ate my Nutty Bar and
- 19 went to bed, nothing crazy --
- 20 Q Okay.
- 21 A -- you know?
- 22 Q And did -- did you go to bed in the room
- 23 with and your daughter?
- 24 A Yeah. So my -- my daughter's crib was
- 25 sitting kind of --

- 1 Q Yeah, go ahead.
- 2 A Dahlia's crib was kind of sitting right here
- along the doorway right here. So as the door would
- 4 open, her crib would be, like, kind of up against the
- 5 wall right here.
- 6 Q Okay.
- 7 A We were both sleeping in the bed. And then
- 8 this is my -- my Cousin Delbert's room. I woke up to
- 9 them banging on this wall right here, like, kind of
- 10 wrestling around. I woke up.
- 11 My girlfriend said, "Go take care of it" --
- 'cause I'm kind of a bigger guy and I'm, you know, the
- 13 -- oh, what's -- what's the word? Like, the enforcer
- or, you know, kind of make everything's okay, like --
- 15 O Mediator?
- 16 A -- separator. Yeah, mediator. That's a
- good word. So I came from here, went past my
- 18 daughter's crib and out the door. By the time I got
- 19 to right here, I heard, "He's stabbing me, he's
- 20 stabbing me."
- So I busted open the door and kind of
- 22 trapped both of the -- them right here up against the
- desk. Okay. So -- so I had the -- yeah, sorry.
- 24 Q I'm going to -- I'm going to ask you sit
- 25 back down just to make that our mics --

```
Yeah.
 1
            Α
                 -- are picking --
 2
            O
 3
            Α
                 So you hear it.
 4
            Q
                 -- you up.
 5
            Α
                 Yeah.
 6
            0
                 What I'll do is --
 7
            Α
                 Sorry.
 8
                 -- I'll just grab this diagram and hold it
 9
       next to you if you want to refer to it.
10
            Α
                 Yeah.
11
                 So just to recap and make sure we caught it,
       so you go to sleep. The crib is between the bed and
12
       the door here?
13
                 Yes, sir.
14
            Α
                 You and are sleeping in the bed?
15
16
                 Yes.
17
            0
                 And then at some point in the night, you
18
       wake up to sounds of fight coming through this wall --
19
            Α
                 Through the --
20
                 -- from Delbert's room?
21
                 Through the wall, yes, from Delbert's room.
            Α
22
       And then I get up, I go to this front -- the front of
23
      Delbert's door. And I hear, "He's stabbing me, he's
       stabbing me."
24
```

So I open the door and kind of trap both of

- them up against this wall. I look and there's -- he's
- 2 at -- he has the knife in his hand -- Jeb has the
- 3 knife in his hand and he's trying to, like, go like
- 4 this to, like, poke my cousin in the wrist so he'd
- 5 kind of let go of him, 'cause he had him like this.
- 6 So he's trying to, like, get him. So I
- 7 backed up and I slammed my shoulder harder into the
- 8 door so it kind of trapped them more and I pulled my
- 9 Cousin Delbert's shirt as I was doing it, so it would
- 10 kind of trap one of them and get the other one kind of
- 11 loose. He went past me.
- 12 And we -- I followed him out to -- this is
- 13 the table and there's a back door right here. I
- 14 followed him to about here. He ran out the back door
- and I said, "Run, he's going to get you," you know,
- just thinking that he was -- you know, they were
- 17 fighting. It wasn't -- I didn't know that he was,
- 18 like, trying to kill everyone.
- 19 So by the time that I seen Delbert go out
- 20 the back door, I turned and he was going into my --
- Jeb had moved from here to went into my room and was
- 22 closing the door as I turned my head.
- 23 Q Now, when you saw Delbert struggling with
- Jeb, you said you saw the knife in Jeb's hand?
- 25 A Yeah. And he was --

- 1 Q And Delbert was holding that hand up?
- 2 A Yeah. He was holding him around his wrist
- 3 like this and then Jeb was trying to, like, inch the
- 4 knife to, like, poke him to, like -- so he would let
- 5 go, you know, kind of thing.
- 6 Q Could you see whether Delbert was injured at
- 7 that --
- 8 A Yeah.
- 9 Q -- point?
- 10 A Oh, yeah. There was blood on the knife
- 11 already.
- 12 Q Okay.
- 13 A Yeah. Yeah. He had, apparently, sliced him
- 14 already. I'm not sure. I just was trying to get them
- separated, you know what I mean?
- 16 Q Sure.
- 17 A Thinking that he was just trying to kill him
- 18 'cause they got in a fight or something, not thinking
- 19 that he's just snapped and is trying to kill everyone
- in the house, so --
- Q Okay. And so you were aware that Delbert
- 22 was injured, but you couldn't see where he was
- 23 injured?
- 24 A No. I could see a little bit of blood from
- his head and he was limping as he ran out the room,

- 1 but --
- Q Okay.
- 3 A And there was blood on the knife, so I was
- 4 just trying to separate the two.
- 5 Q Okay. Did you see any other weapons that
- 6 Jeb had --
- 7 A No.
- 8 Q -- at that point?
- 9 A I didn't see anything else. And when --
- 10 apparently -- so after he went in the room, I turned
- around and opened -- went to go open the door and
- 12 instantaneously --
- Okay. This is -- now, we're jumping back
- 14 to --
- 15 A Sorry.
- 16 Q -- he's gone into your room.
- 17 A Yes. And then so I went from here to the
- 18 backroom and opened the door. And as soon as I opened
- 19 the door, he hit me in the nose with what I believe is
- 20 a sledgehammer or a meat tenderizer. I'm not sure
- 21 what the police had recovered.
- 22 But he hit me in the nose and I -- I just
- remember it crunching like crackers. And, apparently
- 24 -- he just obliterated my whole nose and I looked down
- 25 and I -- like, two or three drops of blood came out

- and just started just (demonstrative sounds) out of my
- 2 nose. I looked up --
- 3 Q Like gushing?
- 4 A Yeah, like, super -- like, really bad
- 5 gushing out of my nose. Apparently, he just
- 6 obliterated -- like, 90 percent of my nose is, like,
- fake now, so --
- 8 Q So what do you mean?
- 9 A Like, the -- he obliterated all the
- 10 cartilage in my nose with, like --
- 11 O And it --
- 12 A -- with just one hit.
- Q Did they have to, like, surgically --
- 14 A Yeah.
- 15 Q -- recreate it?
- 16 A Recreate it, yeah.
- 17 Q Okay.
- 18 A Yeah.
- 19 Q Okay.
- 20 A So then I remember looking up and him having
- 21 the knife to his own throat. And like I said, my
- 22 baby's crib is right here. He's here. I'm in the
- front just gushing blood.
- Q Was the door wide open?
- 25 A Yeah. Wide open, yeah.

- 1 Q Okay.
- 2 A And then I remember him having the knife to
- 3 his throat saying, "I just want to kill myself," and
- 4 then me thinking like that's the moment and I leaned
- forward to grab my daughter and that's when he took
- 6 the knife from his throat and put it in my neck.
- 7 And then I turned around just, like, holy
- 8 shit. And apparent -- I don't remember the -- I don't
- 9 remember this part, but apparently he leaned forward
- and stabbed me through my bicep and my arm through and
- 11 through with the knife and then --
- 12 Q It went all the way through?
- 13 A Yeah. It went from -- so he stabbed me from
- the back here and then out through the front there
- where the knife -- where the knife came out. And I
- 16 remember running from the hallway out the front door
- 17 and seeing my Uncle Jon right here. He was just
- 18 screaming, just laying there just screaming.
- I was trying to hold my neck. I went out to
- 20 the front where the Portland Police Bureau -- there
- 21 was a -- that's where my --
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 23 A That's --
- 24 Q The driveway out here?
- 25 A Yeah, so the driveway. There's -- right

- 1 next to it is a -- a trailer. If you look up here --
- $0 \quad Mm-hmm.$
- 3 A -- there's that big trailer right here.
- 4 O Yeah.
- 5 A And that's where my aunt was staying at at
- 6 the time. So I just slammed on the door screaming,
- 7 "Auntie, I'm dying," and then I went out to the front
- 8 where the -- where the -- the thing came down and just
- 9 laid on my neck -- or laid on -- my hand on my neck
- and just pressed as hard as I could. I don't remember
- anything else until waking up in the hospital with
- 12 tubes in my throat.
- 13 Q Okay. So after you're able to break up this
- fight in Delbert's room, he runs past you, you
- 15 followed him?
- 16 A Yeah. I followed him to the -- to the back
- of the table where -- where this is the table right
- 18 here and this is the back sliding door. So I --
- 19 O And he went out?
- 20 A -- was just standing -- yeah. I was just
- 21 standing right here and watched him go out the back.
- 22 Q Okay. And that's when you -- you turned
- 23 around and saw Jeb --
- 24 A I see Jeb closing the door to my room. And
- then I instantaneously went straight to the door.

- 1 Q Okay. When you reached down for your
- daughter, that's when he stabbed you in the neck?
- 3 A Yeah.
- 4 Q And do you still have a mark from it on your
- 5 neck?
- 6 A On my -- yeah.
- 7 MR. JACKSON: Can you folks see that?
- 8 A GRAND JUROR: Yeah.
- 9 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 10 Q Okay.
- 11 A Yeah. His -- apparently, just the tip of
- 12 the blade has 12 -- 12-inch laceration. And then,
- apparently, just the very tip went actually into my
- lungs. So they had to close up that from the inside.
- 15 I'm not -- I'm not sure I'm -- I was -- I
- 16 was out for all of the -- them telling my mom what
- 17 happened, you know, like, 12 stitches, 13, I don't --
- 18 I don't know any of that information.
- But all I do know is the tip of the blade
- 20 went through my actual lungs and that's why I was
- 21 having issues breathing, is filling up my lungs with
- 22 blood as I was going to the hospital.
- Q Okay. So, I mean, and we can see, just for
- the record, that the incision appears to be on the
- 25 right side of your neck just --

- 1 A Yeah.
- 3 A Yeah. So -- so I think it's like -- did
- 4 they -- they had to cut open a little -- and you can
- 5 see further, like, where it's -- they actually cut
- open and where it was stabbed 'cause it's thicker
- 7 where he stabbed through it.
- And they had to cut open a little bit
- 9 further just to make sure he didn't, like, get me
- 10 anywhere else that was -- you know, like, anything
- 11 else that was cut open.
- But he, apparently, was, like, an inch off
- of my -- my voicebox and then, like, a half inch off
- of my -- what, the corotid artery, the one that would
- make me bleed out in, like, five minutes.
- 16 Q Right.
- 17 A So I got lucky.
- 19 A I got really lucky.
- 20 Q And while you were out there in the driveway
- 21 holding your neck, what did you think was going
- to happen?
- 23 A I -- I just thinking -- well, I was just --
- 24 I slammed on my -- my aunt's thinking that she would
- 25 help, you know, go get my baby. So all I was thinking

- about was my baby and I'm going to die. So I was just
- 2 -- just make sure my baby is okay. And I'll take a
- 3 knife -- knife -- knife wound to the neck any day for
- 4 my child, so --
- 5 Q Mm-hmm.
- 6 A I was just hoping she was all right 'cause
- 7 he was still in the room. Feeling very powerless.
- 8 Q You were feeling powerless?
- 9 A Oh, yeah.
- 10 0 Okay.
- 11 A Oh, yeah. I mean, my daughter and my baby
- are still in the room and I just got stabbed in the
- 13 neck and can't do anything about it.
- O Mm-hmm.
- 15 A So --
- 16 Q And so your last memory is laying there.
- 17 And do you remember police officers coming or --
- 18 A I don't --
- 19 Q -- anything --
- 20 A I don't --
- Q -- about that?
- 22 A I don't remember anything like that.
- 23 Apparently, they said I got up and walked to the
- ambulance when it came, but I don't remember anything.
- Q Okay.

- 1 A I don't remember anything --
- 2 Q And -- and what --
- 3 A -- until waking --
- 4 Q -- is your next --
- 5 A -- up.
- 6 Q -- memory?
- 7 A Waking up in the hospital --
- 8 Q Okay.
- 9 A -- with tubes in my throat. I had a tube
- in -- like a feeding tube in through my -- in through
- 11 my nose down the back of my throat and I puked it up.
- 12 And it, like, went like a loop like this and I could
- 13 put my hand through the loop.
- 14 It -- and then, apparently, they had to take
- it out and I just said, "Pimping ain't easy," and then
- was out like a light. I don't remember anything past
- that until I woke up further in the hospital.
- 18 Q Okay. And do you know how many days you
- were in the hospital?
- 20 A About a week and a half and then left for a
- 21 day and a half. And then that secondary night, I went
- 22 back because I was coughing up blood, like,
- 23 continuously. And it was quite -- quite a bit. Like,
- 24 I just -- I could probably fill this whole thing up
- twice with the blood that I was coughing, so --

- 1 Q Okay. So you went back into the hospital?
- 2 A Yeah. I went back to the hospital and they
- 3 put me on, like, just a watch for -- for about 24
- 4 hours. So just made sure everything was -- they had
- 5 to spray this weird stuff in -- in my throat that was
- 6 like a -- like a mist that, like, coagulates
- 7 everything, so that way, I would stop bleeding 'cause
- 8 I was on blood thinners.
- 9 Q Okay. At any point during this whole
- incident or episode, do you remember Jeb saying
- 11 anything?
- 12 A Just the only point where he had the knife
- to his throat saying, "I want to kill myself," and I
- 14 had no clue why or what anything was happening, so --
- 15 Q And that was then you -- you jumped down to
- 16 try to get --
- 17 A Yeah.
- 18 Q -- your daughter?
- 19 A To grab my daughter and -- and I --
- 20 Q Okay.
- 21 A -- just got -- I remember getting stabbed in
- 22 the neck and it was like -- I don't know if you ever
- cook, like, roast beef. And, like, you have to stab
- 24 the -- the temperature thing in there, you cut it open
- in the middle.

- 1 Like, when you stab the knife in and it kind
- of gives you that play as you pull the knife out, that
- 3 was probably the -- the worst part, like, was just
- 4 thinking about that as I'm leaving the room, was --
- 5 Q You could feel that happening --
- 6 A Oh, yeah.
- 7 Q -- with your --
- 8 A Oh, yeah. It was insane. It was like a --
- 9 it was -- yeah. It gives me anxieties now just
- 10 talking about it. Like, it was, like, literally like
- grabbing a piece of meat. And, like, going to pull it
- out and it doesn't come clean out, it just kind of
- (demonstrative sounds) yeah, just, like, out and then
- 14 back.
- 15 0 Okay.
- 16 A It was pretty fucking crazy.
- 17 Q Yeah. And you actually don't have any
- 18 memory of the --
- 19 A Of the arm? No.
- 20 Q -- arm stabbing?
- 21 A I don't -- I don't remember -- as soon as he
- 22 hit me in the neck, I just remember blood squirting
- out of my neck like it was a -- like, literally like a
- 24 scary movie. It was -- it was, like, (demonstrative
- 25 sound) like this -- yeah. Everywhere I'd go, I --

- 1 apparently, my whole house was just covered in blood.
- I don't know. My grandma and them wouldn't
- 3 let me go back the next day when they were cleaning
- 4 it, so --
- 5 Q Okay. They wouldn't let you in to see it?
- 6 A Yeah, no. They --
- 7 O Yeah?
- 8 A -- wouldn't let me come.
- 9 Q Okay. Okay.
- 10 A And then by the time I got out of the
- 11 hospital, they had cleaned up pretty much everything
- 12 at the house. Everything was in a trailer out front
- that they just threw everything out of the bedroom
- 14 into a trailer.
- MR. JACKSON: Okay. Derrick, I think that's
- 16 all the questions that I have for you.
- 17 Do the grand jurors have any questions?
- 18 A GRAND JUROR: Thank you.
- 19 THE WITNESS: Thank you.
- 20 A GRAND JUROR: One.
- MR. JACKSON: Yes.
- 22 A GRAND JUROR: You said that you hadn't
- 23 heard of Jeb, like, since you were --
- THE WITNESS: No.
- 25 A GRAND JUROR: -- really young.

1	THE WITNESS: No, not
2	A GRAND JUROR: Do you do you know if he
3	lives in Portland or
4	THE WITNESS: I have no clue. I know
5	A GRAND JUROR: No?
6	THE WITNESS: that he's got richer family
7	that's my uncle's side of the family; but, like I
8	said, my uncle, like, lost his his medical degree
9	or something like that and then they just kind of
10	kicked him out. Like, he's just been at my grandma's
11	house, like, bootlegging it for the last ten years.
12	So
13	A GRAND JUROR: And that's Jon?
14	THE WITNESS: And that that's Jon. Yeah.
15	That's where I believe Jeb is his son, so he came
16	over to help him move out to (indiscernible). And
17	that's when all this crazy stuff happened. And if I
18	would have known that anything you know what I
19	mean?
20	That that there was some kind of before
21	that he got apparently, he had
22	MR. JACKSON: Wait, wait.
23	THE WITNESS: had to
24	MR. JACKSON: Let's stop
25	THE WITNESS: Yeah.

```
1
                 MR. JACKSON:
                               -- there.
 2
                 THE WITNESS:
                               So --
       BY MR. JACKSON:
 3
                 Let me ask a follow-up question. If -- if
 4
 5
      you had known --
 6
            Α
                 I --
 7
                 -- he was going to do something like this --
 8
                 I would have fucking left.
 9
                 -- I -- I imagine, yeah, you would have
10
       taken your family --
11
                 Oh, yeah.
            Α
12
                 -- somewhere else?
                 Are you serious? My daughter is in the
13
               There's no way in hell I would have stayed
14
       anywhere close to that.
15
16
                 Right. Okay.
                 I have multiple places that I could go that
17
       would not put my daughter in danger.
18
19
            Q
                 Okay.
20
            Α
                 Yeah. No. Fuck, that's nuts.
21
            Q
                 And --
22
            Α
                 That's crazy.
23
            Q
                -- fiance --
24
            Α
                 Yeah.
```

25

Q

-- of course.

- 1 A Yeah, and my fiance. Yeah. And my life,
- 2 you know what I mean? Like -- right. Like, no way I
- 3 would -- I even had a clue. I didn't even have a
- 4 clue.
- I didn't even -- I -- my big knife that my
- 6 uncle gave me from the Army is sitting in my room.
- 7 And, I mean, if I had known something, I would have
- 8 grabbed my knife instantly and -- and it would have
- 9 been a whole different story or at least tried to been
- a whole different story, you know what I mean?
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 12 A But, no, I didn't. I just thought they were
- fighting, man. I came in the other room thinking, you
- 14 know, just separate them so he doesn't kill him. And
- 15 then as soon as I turned around, he's in my daughter's
- 16 room with my girlfriend, so -- it was -- it was like
- 17 a --
- 18 A GRAND JUROR: You -- you thought --
- 19 THE WITNESS: -- scary movie, man.
- 20 A GRAND JUROR: -- it was a specific
- 21 argument between --
- THE WITNESS: Be --
- 23 A GRAND JUROR: -- Delbert --
- 24 THE WITNESS: Between Delbert and him, yeah.
- 25 A GRAND JUROR: Okay.

- 1 THE WITNESS: I did. 'Cause there's -- it's
- 2 -- you know, the house is kind of -- kind of brutal.
- 3 Like, it's like a kind of ghetto house and people get
- 4 in fights all the time there, you know what I mean?
- 5 So it's like -- my girlfriend woke me up and
- 6 was like, "You know, go take care of it," not thinking
- 7 anything, you know what I mean? So it -- it was just
- 8 -- it was just crazy. It was crazy.
- 9 And it was my family member, so even more --
- 10 you don't think that your family member, even if you
- 11 haven't seen them for 10, 15 years, is going to kill
- 12 you and your whole freaking family. I mean, you'd
- think that -- I mean, no offense, you think that he'd
- want to take someone else out, not his own.
- 15 BY MR. JACKSON:
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 17 A It -- it just -- it doesn't really -- it
- doesn't even compute to me, so --
- 19 MR. JACKSON: Okay. Are there any other
- 20 questions for Mr. Rogers? Yes.
- THE WITNESS: Thank you, guys.
- MR. JACKSON: I don't see any.
- Okay. Thank you very much, sir.
- 24 A GRAND JUROR: Thank you. Go hug your
- 25 family.

Examination of Delbert Littlejohn

1	THE WITNESS: Yeah. Yeah, I know. I
2	A GRAND JUROR: Thank you.
3	THE WITNESS: I'm just happy to be here,
4	guys.
5	MR. JACKSON: Okay. And I with that, why
6	don't we take our lunch break, so we'll go off the
7	record.
8	* * *
9	(Noon Recess taken at 1:06 p.m.)
10	
11	AFTERNOON SESSION
12	(The following proceedings were held before
13	Grand Jury No. 3 at 2:09 p.m.:)
14	MR. JACKSON: Okay. We're back on the
15	record following our lunch break. We have our next
16	witness.
17	If you could raise your right hand, sir.
18	DELBERT LITTLEJOHN
19	Was thereupon called as a witness; and, having been
20	first duly sworn, was examined and testified as follows:
21	EXAMINATION
22	BY MR. JACKSON:
23	Q Okay. You can have a seat.
24	And could you please state and spell your
25	name.

- 1 A My name is Delbert, D-e-l-b-e-r-t; last name
- 2 Littlejohn, L-i-t-t-l-e-j-o-h-n.
- 3 Q Okay. And sir, how do you know
- 4 Betty Littlejohn?
- 5 A She's my aunt.
- 6 Q Okay. And do you live in the house
- 7 with her?
- 8 A Yes, I do.
- 9 O And is that house here at 111 --
- 10 A
- 11 Q Okay. And how long have you lived there?
- 12 A I'd say going on probably six, seven years.
- Q Okay. So quite a while?
- 14 A Yes.
- 15 Q And over that time period, have people kind
- of come and gone living in the house or has it been
- 17 pretty steady?
- 18 A It's mainly just a bunch that lives there,
- but there's been a lot of in and out traffic through
- the years.
- Q Okay. And on April 29th, 2019, were you
- 22 living there?
- 23 A Yes.
- Q Okay. And who else was living in the house
- 25 at that time?

- 1 A My aunt, of course. Derrick, his girlfriend
- and their baby, me and Littlejohn. And that's
- 3 what's pretty much living there.
- 4 Q Okay. And if you look at this diagram we
- 5 have here of the house, we have these rooms marked.
- 6 And the one labeled Delbert Littlejohn --
- 7 A That's me.
- 9 A That's the one I was staying in. Was
- 10 O And then next to you, is that --
- 11 A That's my cousin Derrick's room, Derrick and
- 12
- Q Okay. And your aunt --
- 14 A That's my Aunt Betty's.
- 15 Q Okay. And then where was Jon staying?
- 16 A He would be -- he would be in the family
- 17 room. He'd be on the couch, down that -- I believe,
- 18 that couch, I believe. This one.
- 19 Q Okay.
- 20 A The light was off in the front room, so I
- 21 don't know just who it was and whether it would have
- 22 been -- excuse me, Jeb or my cousin, Uncle Jon.
- Q Okay. And he was living, though, like he
- 24 would sleep in this front room?
- 25 A Yeah.

- 1 Q Would he also sometimes sleep in the garage?
- 2 A Yes.
- 3 Q Okay. And previous to that, was he living
- 4 out of a trailer that was in the back of the house?
- 5 A Yes, he was.
- 6 Q And when did that end? When did he stop
- 7 living back there?
- 8 A Oh, ah, I'd say that was maybe a week --
- 9 maybe a week or two, three weeks prior.
- 10 Okay. Okay. And you mentioned Jeb Brock.
- 11 How do you know him?
- 12 A He's my -- he's my cousin. That's my
- 13 uncle's side.
- 0 Okay. John's son?
- 15 A John's son, yes.
- 16 Q Okay. And was he living there at the time
- 17 as well?
- 18 A Not Jeb. He was -- I was coming back from
- 19 Madras and that's how I knew he was there, 'cause when
- 20 I came back from Madras that afternoon or morning,
- they were out back. Him and his father both were.
- Q Okay. And was that the 28th?
- 23 A Yes, I believe.
- Q April 28th, Sunday?
- 25 A Yes. Yes, that's right.

- 1 Q Okay. And so you come back to house from
- 2 Madras. How long were you gone?
- 3 A Two days. I think, about four or five days,
- 4 maybe a week.
- 5 Q Okay. Jeb wasn't around when you left?
- 6 A No.
- 7 Q Okay. So you get back to the house. Jeb's
- 8 there. Had you seen Jeb in a while?
- 9 A Oh, the last time I saw Jeb was, I believe,
- 10 around the end of summer of last -- I mean, winter of
- 11 last year.
- 12 Q Okay. So it had been a while since you'd
- 13 seen him?
- 14 A It had been a while, yeah.
- 15 Q Okay. And when you got back to the house,
- were the rest of the folks that live there, were they
- 17 there as well?
- 18 A Yes.
- 19 Q Okay. And did everything seem normal and
- 20 fine?
- 21 A Everything was perfect. Everybody was
- 22 out -- well, I shouldn't say everybody. It was just
- me, Jeb and Jon were out back, just, you know, smoking
- and enjoying the sunshine, laughing, giggling. And
- 25 then --

- 1 Q Okay.
- 2 A -- what conspired then was, here we are.
- 3 Q Yeah, okay.
- 4 A Yeah.
- 5 Q So that was during the day.
- 6 A During the day.
- 7 Q And you went to bed that night?
- 8 A Yeah.
- 9 Q Everything seemed normal, fine?
- 10 A Everything was fine. Everything was fine.
- 11 Q Do you remember what time you went to bed?
- 12 A Oh, I'd say it was probably around -- oh,
- probably around 6:30, 7:00. I don't know. I think
- 14 closer to 7:00ish.
- 15 Q Okay. In the evening?
- 16 A Yes.
- 17 Q Is it normal for you to go to bed that
- 18 early?
- 19 A Yeah. You know -- you know, I -- I don't
- 20 get much sleep, so I, generally, sleep more during the
- 21 day than I do at night, you know. Of course, now with
- 22 this incident that happened, I hardly don't get any,
- 23 but --
- Q Sleep?
- 25 A Yeah.

- 1 Q Okay. So you went to bed around 7:00. And
- then when do you remember waking up?
- 3 A Oh, I woke up. Everything was still fine.
- I woke up around, I'd say it was probably closer to
- 5 2:00 or a little after 2:00. Made my first cup of
- 6 coffee. Put a load of laundry in. And this is where
- 7 it starts to go from laundry to where we are now.
- 8 Q Okay. So let me just ask you, did you wake
- 9 up just naturally or did you set an alarm for --
- 10 A No, I just woke up naturally.
- 11 Q You just woke up?
- 12 A I just -- I just wake up, you know.
- 13 Sometimes I can sleep. Sometimes I can't. If I feel
- like I got to get up, I get up.
- 15 Q Okay.
- 16 A I stay up. I can't go back to sleep.
- 17 Q Okay. So you get up early in the morning
- 18 and you went out -- you made a cup of coffee and then
- 19 you went to the garage to do laundry?
- 20 A I put my cup of coffee down, grabbed my
- 21 clothes up out of the bedroom and proceeded to go out
- 22 through the kitchen in the garage, put my laundry in.
- 23 Q Okay.
- 24 A That's where --
- 25 Q And when you went out, were any lights on or

- 1 was it all dark?
- 2 A I -- I turned the light on.
- 3 Q Which -- which light, do you remember?
- 4 A The garage -- the garage lights. There's
- 5 two light switches next to the refrigerator. One's
- for the kitchen light and one's for the garage.
- 7 Q Okay. What about in the house? Were any
- 8 lights on in the house?
- 9 A No.
- 11 A Oh, that -- yeah, yeah it was dark. Yeah.
- 12 I remember it was dark.
- Q Okay. And so while you're in the garage,
- 14 did you see anybody in there?
- 15 A No.
- 16 Q Okay. And if you look at this diagram here,
- there's a chair. So is this the garage door at the
- 18 north -- north end of the garage?
- 19 A That's the garage door.
- 20 Q And then this chair --
- 21 A That would be -- that's the chair in the
- 22 middle of the garage, closest to the door. That would
- 23 be the one that reclines.
- Q Is that the one that Jon will sleep
- 25 sometimes?

- 1 A Yes.
- 2 Q Okay. And so where in here are the laundry
- 3 machines or the washing machine and dryer?
- 4 A Well, if I may stand?
- 5 O Yeah. Go ahead.
- 6 A Here, this would be -- this would be the
- 7 door into the -- into the garage. And just to the
- 8 right of that would be the washer and dryer.
- 9 Okay. And can you see from the washer and
- 10 dryer back to this chair or is there a bunch of stuff
- 11 kind of in the way?
- 12 A There was pretty much -- there was pretty
- much a clear view from -- from the washer and dryer to
- 14 there.
- 15 Q Do you remember looking to see if Jon was
- 16 sleeping in the chair?
- 17 A No. I -- there wasn't no -- anybody in
- 18 there.
- 19 Q Okay. You can have a seat. Thank you very
- 20 much.
- 21 A GRAND JUROR: I didn't hear that last
- answer.
- THE WITNESS: There wasn't nobody in there.
- 24 It was just me.
- 25 BY MR. JACKSON:

- 1 Q Okay. Just you by yourself?
- 2 A Just my -- by myself.
- 3 Q Okay. What happened then?
- 4 A Well, I was putting my clothes in the
- 5 washing machine and getting ready to turn it on. Then
- 6 that's when my cousin Jeb came in and -- so fine. He
- 7 didn't seem, you know, to be an issue.
- 8 He went to light a cigarette and I went back
- 9 in the house, finished the last little bit of my first
- 10 cup of coffee, started to make another one, 'cause I
- 11 have little --
- 12 Q Did -- did you talk to him at all while you
- guys were in the garage?
- 14 A No, no. No, I didn't. I -- only thing I --
- 15 was said to him was when he opened my door and started
- with the, you know, the bashing and stabbing, you
- 17 know, and stuff, so --
- 18 Q So he came out and just lit up a cigarette.
- 19 You didn't really say anything to him and just went
- 20 back in?
- 21 A No. No.
- 22 Q Did you notice anything about him? Did he
- 23 seem --
- 24 A No, he didn't. He didn't seem -- he
- 25 didn't --

- 1 Q -- different or --
- 2 A -- seem like he was off or anything. He
- didn't look like he was on any type of, you know,
- 4 substance or anything, you know.
- 5 MR. JACKSON: Okay.
- A GRAND JUROR: He was coming from the
- 7 house, like from the kitchen?
- 8 THE WITNESS: I was coming -- I was coming
- 9 up out of the garage. I was coming up out of the
- 10 garage back down the hallway to --
- 11 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 12 Q Well, let me -- so it is your room here,
- door, hallway --
- 14 A Okay, yeah. This -- this --
- 15 Q -- kitchen and then into the garage here?
- 16 A Right. Here's the hallway bathroom. Okay,
- 17 yeah, my room's right -- I was coming down, so --
- 18 yeah. so I'm just nervous.
- MR. JACKSON: That's okay.
- 20 A GRAND JUROR: Where was he when you --
- 21 when you -- you just saw him with the cigarette?
- 22 THE WITNESS: I was in the garage. I was --
- A GRAND JUROR: Where was he?
- 24 THE WITNESS: He was coming -- he was coming
- into the garage as I was --

- 1 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 2 Q That was the back door. Okay.
- 3 A From -- from inside the house, yes.
- 4 A GRAND JUROR: From inside.
- 5 A GRAND JUROR: Okay. Thank you.
- 6 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 7 Q So this door?
- 8 A Yeah.
- 9 Q This door into the garage?
- 10 A Oh, that -- okay.
- 11 Q Yeah. Okay. Got it. And you just kind of
- walked past him, went back to your room, finished your
- 13 coffee?
- 14 A Well, I -- yeah, I walked past him and went
- 15 back to my room and started work on my second cup.
- 16 And then I hear a thump, thump.
- 17 And I'm, you know, my aunt, she's had two
- strokes and sometimes she walks with a cane and
- 19 sometimes she hangs onto the wall or something. And I
- 20 hear this thump and I think it's her. But --
- Q Could you tell where it was coming from?
- 22 A Ah, it sounded like it was coming from her
- 23 room or that distance of the house, but it wasn't her.
- 24 It was Jeb.
- Q Okay. And so did you go out to check on her

- or did you stay in your room?
- 2 A No. No, I -- when I hear her she goes to
- 3 the bathroom. It's about the only time she gets up,
- 4 you know, to use the bathroom. So like I said, I
- 5 was -- I was thinking it was her.
- 6 Q Mm-hmm. Okay. And then what happened?
- 7 A Then I'm sitting there on the -- on the edge
- 8 of my bed, starting to work on my second cup of coffee
- 9 and then the door just flies open. Well, I wouldn't
- 10 necessary say it kicked open, but it just flew open.
- 11 O Your door was closed then?
- 12 A Yes. I had my door shut.
- 13 Q Okay.
- 14 A And I see him coming in, coming in like
- 15 this. He was like this and he had a hammer down,
- 16 five-pound sledgehammer. So I don't know what he had
- 17 here. Could have been a gun, knife, whatever. I
- didn't really know until he couldn't use this no more
- 19 and then he was like this.
- 20 Q Okay. So just for the record, you're
- 21 holding your left arm behind your back.
- 22 A He was like this --
- 23 Q And your right arm down at your side with
- 24 a --
- 25 A With the hammer, right.

- 1 Q Okay. And it was Jeb that was in the
- 2 doorway?
- 3 A Jeb. Jeb.
- 4 Q Was anybody else near or around him?
- 5 A No. It was just me and him in the bedroom.
- 6 Q Okay.
- 7 A Nobody else -- nobody else knew what was
- 8 going on 'til the second time I got whacked in the
- 9 head is when I picked up Jeb and threw him up against
- 10 the wall. That's what woke up my cousin --
- 11 Q Okay.
- 12 A -- in the previous bedroom, next -- next
- 13 wall over.
- Q Okay. When he opened the door, did he say
- anything to you?
- 16 A My cousin?
- 17 O Yeah, Jeb.
- 18 A They said -- they said I -- I was yelling,
- "I'm getting stabbed." I don't remember. Maybe I
- 20 did. Maybe I did say I was getting stabbed.
- 21 Q I mean, you said the door flies open. He's
- 22 standing there. He's get his left arm behind his back
- 23 and his right arm down with a hammer in it. Did he
- say anything to you?
- 25 A No, he didn't. Just walked up to me and

- 1 smacked me in the head with a hammer. And that's --
- and then when I stood up, that's when he smacked me
- 3 again.
- 4 Q Did he -- did his face look different than
- 5 what you had seen when you saw him in the garage?
- 6 A Oh, yeah. It was definitely -- it was
- 7 definitely, definitely a change.
- 8 0 What was different about it?
- 9 A He didn't look -- how should I say this --
- 10 human. As far as eyes, it almost looked black.
- 11 Q Okay. His eyes looked like black?
- 12 A Yeah. I was hit in the head twice with a
- hammer, so my vision wasn't all quite, you know.
- O Mm-hmm.
- 15 A I don't want to be funny, but, you know,
- 16 it's just --
- 17 Q But his -- his face did look different to
- 18 you?
- 19 A Yeah, it just looked off from that following
- 20 day.
- Q Okay. And so he walks in and he hits you.
- 22 Do you remember where he hit you with the hammer?
- 23 A Yeah, hit me here.
- Q Okay. And you're pointing to the top left
- of your head?

- 1 A Head, right. And then just after he hit me
- the first time, I stood up. And that's when he
- 3 smacked me a second time.
- 4 And I'm almost in the middle of my room.
- 5 That's when he smacked me a second time. Well, I
- 6 managed to get the hammer. I mean, not grab the
- 7 hammer, but block -- grabbed ahold of his wrist and
- 8 got the hammer.
- 9 O Mm-hmm.
- 10 A Well, then he started -- he couldn't use
- 11 this no more, so he started doing -- doing this and I
- guess that's how I got this. And this -- this
- happened as I was leaving the bedroom.
- 14 Q Okay.
- 15 A My Cousin Derrick pushed the door open just
- enough for me to get this part of me out, but this
- 17 part of me was still hanging in there, but he got
- 18 this.
- 19 Q Okay. And so just to kind of step back
- 20 through that, so he hits you in the head. You stand
- 21 up. He hits you again. You throw him against the
- 22 dresser?
- 23 A Right. Well, the wall with the dresser,
- 24 yeah.
- Q Or the wall? Okay. And you're holding the

- 1 wrist that is holding onto the hammer. And are these
- 2 overhand swings?
- 3 A Oh, yeah. Well, this -- yeah, an overhand
- 4 swing with the hammer.
- 5 Q Okay. So are you kind of like -- are you
- 6 pinning his wrist against the wall or is it kind of
- 7 out and you're just holding it?
- 8 A Oh, no. It's -- I wouldn't necessarily say
- 9 up against the wall, but I'll -- no, pretty much to
- 10 the wall. But he had -- he was getting free range of
- 11 motion with this. That's how, you know, this and
- 12 this.
- 13 Q Okay. And so for the record, you're
- indicating your left hand. And when did you realize
- what was actually in his left hand?
- 16 A When I got stuck.
- 17 Q Okay. That's when you realized it was --
- 18 A 'Cause that was here. 'Cause that's --
- 19 that's when he -- 'cause when he couldn't -- realized
- 20 he couldn't use the hammer no more, that's when he
- 21 started coming out with this.
- 22 Q Okay. And was it --
- 23 A And he got me here first.
- 24 Q And so here is behind your left shoulder?
- 25 A He got me here first.

- 1 Q Okay.
- 2 A And then when he couldn't, you know -- I was
- 3 blocking here, then he was trying to get me in the
- 4 ribs here. And then when that wasn't working, that's
- 5 when I got just that much feet or inches, door coming
- open for me to get out. And that's when this part of
- 7 me was out, but this was still out -- in the room.
- 8 Q Okay. So your upper half was able to get
- 9 out of the room?
- 10 A Was out, but this half was still -- 'cause
- 11 he was -- he was trying to keep the door shut, keep me
- 12 from going out.
- O Mm-hmm.
- 14 A But Derrick -- Derrick had it --
- 15 Q Okay.
- 16 A -- you know, just -- just wasn't very much,
- 17 but apparently enough for me to get out, but yeah.
- 18 Q Okay. And so it sounds like as you're
- 19 holding him against the wall, Derrick pushes the door
- 20 open?
- 21 A Right.
- 22 Q And then did you just let Jeb go and run out
- 23 the --
- 24 A Well, I really necessarily let him go. I
- 25 mean, at this point, he -- he -- he laxed his hand

- 1 with the hammer. I heard the hammer fall to the
- 2 ground.
- Q Okay.
- 4 A I wasn't going to pick it up. I'm still
- 5 trying to -- but when the door came open just enough,
- 6 I --
- 7 Q Were you crawling out or were you --
- 8 A No. I was literally trying to get out,
- 9 was --
- 10 O Like running?
- 11 A I wasn't on the ground on my knees. I was
- just going. I didn't realize this happened till they
- 13 cut me by the ambulance.
- 0 Okay. And so the calf -- and you're
- pointing to your calf. That was stabbed.
- 16 A Yeah, my left calf 'cause -- it was -- cut
- me open.
- 18 Q Okay. And would you mind stepping to the
- side of the table so the grand jurors can see your
- 20 calf there. Were you able to see that, sir?
- Okay. Okay. And so was that more of a -- a
- 22 cutting injury across your calf or was it a stab into
- 23 your leg?
- 24 A Well, it felt like -- it felt like it got
- 25 stabbed. I mean, just straight in, pull out.

- 1 Q Okay.
- 2 A I -- I really didn't know. My adrenaline
- 3 was so -- was so high. I knew I was bleeding here and
- 4 here. I felt the pain. I just didn't know. I
- 5 thought this was worser than this.
- 7 A Right. Yeah.
- 8 O Your head was worse?
- 9 A I thought my head was worser than my calf.
- 10 Well, I -- like I said, I didn't realize how bad my
- 11 calf was until I got to the back of the ambulance and
- 12 the nurse -- the med tech there cut my pant -- the
- pajama pants and --
- 14 O Okay.
- 15 A -- it was -- wasn't a stab. It was a gash.
- 16 Q Yeah. Okay. So you make your way out of
- 17 the room. Where did you go?
- 18 A Well, when Derrick -- when Derrick got me
- out, he helped me to the back porch, like this.
- 20 Q Okay. Holding your head --
- 21 A Really didn't care about my leg, 'cause like
- I said, I thought I was just stabbed.
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 24 A And then -- and then when -- I'm still like
- 25 this. And I said, well, I got to -- I got to go in

- 1 the house. I got to get a rag, 'cause this -- this
- 2 hand ain't working -- isn't working.
- 3 So I go and I -- and by the time I put my
- 4 right foot in the -- over the threshold of the back
- 5 door, I see Derrick coming down the hallway going like
- 6 this and pulling his --
- 7 Q Pulling his neck?
- 8 A Yeah. Holding it and blood just --
- 9 Q Squirting out of him?
- 10 A Yeah. He was -- it sounded like he was
- 11 dying. He was gurgling. It was just --
- 12 Q Okay. When -- when, if ever, did you
- 13 realize that Derrick was no longer with you out in
- 14 the -- I mean, you leave your --
- 15 A Well, when he --
- 16 Q -- bedroom and you come out the back. You
- 17 said he was with you. Did he go back --
- 18 A Well, he -- he --
- 19 O -- in or --
- 20 A Well, yeah. His -- his daughter and his
- 21 girlfriend was in the backroom, so, of course, he's
- 22 going to go back into that backroom. And that's why
- 23 he got all those injuries he did is 'cause, you
- 24 know --
- Q Okay. And did you actually see Jeb come out

of your room? 1 No, I didn't. I was -- I was --2 3 You were outside? 4 He just got me out and Derrick got me into the backyard and he went back down the hallway and --5 6 Q Okay. 7 The incident after me was towards Derrick and his daughter. 8 and 9 Right. Okay. So you're standing out back. 0 Your holding your head with your hand and you decide 10 you need to get a rag? 11 12 Α Mm-hmm. 13 Okay. And then so you went back in and 0 that's when you saw Derrick coming down the hall --14 Just before I put my --15 Α Yeah. -- holding his neck? 16 17 Just as I was just put my foot into the 18 threshold of the back sliding glass door, I see Derrick coming down just going like this. 19 20 0 Mm-hmm. 21 And he literally collapsed. Α 22 Q Okay. When you were outside in the 23 backyard, did you make any phone calls? I -- I -- I made a phone call to 9-1-1. 24 Α

25

Q

Okay.

- 1 A I believe I was just coming in, 'cause I
- went back out with the rag. I was just coming back in
- 3 as I had -- was talking to dispatch.
- 4 Q Okay. When you saw Derrick?
- 5 A No. This was after.
- 6 Q Oh, okay. So could you take us through,
- you're outside, you're on the phone with 9-1-1.
- 8 A Mm-hmm.
- 9 O You step in. You see Derrick. He
- 10 collapses. And then what -- what happened? What did
- 11 you do?
- 12 A That's when -- that's when the officers
- showed up, 'cause they wouldn't let -- they weren't
- going to let the EMTs come in when we've got somebody
- with a knife, you know, going crazy, so --
- 16 Q Okay. And you were still on the phone with
- 17 9-1-1?
- 18 A Not long. I -- I think dispatch heard
- 19 them. They were in the background, 'cause they were
- 20 quite loud. So yeah.
- 21 Q The police?
- 22 A Yes.
- 23 Q Okay.
- A He says, I'm going to -- I'm just going to
- 25 hang up from you. I said okay.

- 1 Q Okay.
- 2 A Said, as long as -- as long as help is
- 3 there, then we'll let you go. Well, they were there.
- 4 It didn't take them long to get there.
- 5 Q Okay. Did you see where -- you said you
- 6 went back outside the back door --
- 7 A The sliding --
- 8 Q -- once you got the rag -- the rag.
- 9 A The sliding door, backyard, yes.
- 10 Q Okay. How long did you stay out there?
- 11 A Not long, 'cause the second time -- the
- 12 second time I came in after I -- after I got the rag
- is when I saw, like I said, saw my cousin Derrick like
- this and collapse. I didn't go down the hallway. I
- 15 was fixing to go out front, 'cause that's -- I saw the
- 16 lights coming and --
- 17 O Uh-huh.
- 18 A I was fixing to go out front and get out of
- 19 that house.
- 20 Q Yeah.
- 21 A And I wanted to go back and -- but --
- 22 Q You were injured.
- 23 A I couldn't. I couldn't, so --
- Q Yeah.
- 25 A And --

- 1 Q Okay. So just to make sure we're totally
- 2 clear here on the sequence of events. You're in the
- 3 bedroom, Derrick pushed the door in and then you're
- 4 able to make your way out. Derrick comes out with
- 5 you, but then goes back to the back.
- 6 A Right. He helps me -- he helps me to the --
- 7 he literally had to hang onto me. I was -- felt like
- 8 I was going to pass out, but yeah, he literally walked
- 9 me to the patio, helped me sit down and he said to
- 10 stay here.
- O Mm-hmm.
- 12 A I just -- I wanted to, but I couldn't. I
- 13 couldn't. I was just --
- Q And then you went back in to get a rag
- 15 and --
- 16 A And that's when --
- 17 O -- came back out.
- 18 A And that's -- well, when I came back in,
- 19 that's when I saw Derrick. I already had -- yeah.
- 20 Q Did you already have the rag at that point?
- 21 A No.
- 22 Q No. Okay. So you go back in to get the
- 23 rag?
- 24 A I went back in to get the rag.
- 25 Q And that's when you saw --

- 1 A And that's when I saw Derrick.
- 3 you went back outside?
- 4 A Yes.
- 5 Q The back?
- 6 A Right.
- 7 Q Okay. And then when did you come back into
- 8 the house?
- 9 A When I heard sirens.
- 10 O Okay. And was Derrick still there in the
- 11 hallway?
- 12 A I believe he was outside. I think -- I
- think he was -- sorry, bash in head.
- 14 O That's okay.
- 15 A He might have been still in the house, but
- then again, he might have been outside. I really
- 17 don't know.
- 18 Q Okay. Did you make your way straight out
- 19 the front of the house?
- 20 A I walked -- I walked to the front of the
- 21 house, family room, to the front porch and walked out
- 22 to the street.
- Q Okay. And what did you find when you got
- out the front of the house?
- 25 A Officers everywhere. Here, there.

- 1 O Police were all out there?
- 2 A Right. Well, the -- I don't know just how
- 3 much officers was in the house. Could have been one.
- 4 But --
- 5 Q Okay.
- 6 A -- I don't know. Just --
- 7 Q Did you see Derrick out there?
- 8 A Oh, yeah. He was outside.
- 9 O He was out there. Okay.
- 10 A Yeah. He was on the -- on the ground by the
- 11 mailbox beyond the -- beyond the Jeep, just --
- 12 Q Okay. Okay. What about Lana? Was she out
- 13 there?
- 14 A She -- she was -- you know, she was within
- sight, but she was nowhere on the property. She was
- 16 across the street.
- Oh, she was across the street when you came
- 18 out?
- 19 A Yes.
- 20 Q Okay. At any point during this, did you see
- Jon or Betty?
- 22 A Only time I saw Betty is when she heard the
- ruckus, 'cause when Derrick was trying to get in the
- door, that's what woke her up.
- Q Okay. And you actually saw her?

- 1 A Yeah. She was -- she was --
- 2 Q Where was she?
- 3 A She was getting out of bed.
- 4 Q Okay. Was she down the hall by her bedroom
- 5 door or --
- 6 A She was -- she was -- I believe she was --
- 7 she was -- as I was walking -- walking out the door,
- 8 she was -- she was just coming up to the bird cage.
- 9 Q Okay. And --
- 10 A That's --
- 11 Q -- this bird cage, the big bird cage --
- 12 A -- right.
- 13 Q -- right here?
- 14 A Yeah.
- 15 Q Okay.
- 16 A She was just coming up to the bird cage.
- 17 Q So she had made her way all the way down the
- 18 hall?
- 19 A Right.
- 20 Q Okay. And that's when you were making your
- 21 first exit?
- 22 A Right.
- Q Okay. And what about Jon Brock? Could you
- see him ever?
- 25 A No.

- 1 Q Don't remember ever seeing him?
- 2 A I didn't -- I didn't see Jon 'til -- 'til
- 3 the lights came on. He was covered in blood and --
- 4 Q When -- when did the lights come on?
- 5 A I don't know who just turned them on, but
- 6 they were on --
- 7 Q Was it before or after the police got there?
- 8 A It was after.
- 9 O After the police arrived?
- 10 A So apparently, yeah. Someone turned them
- on, 'cause it was -- it wasn't on -- when I was out
- back or coming in, they weren't on.
- Q Okay. Okay. So once the lights were on and
- the police were already there, that's the first time
- 15 you saw Jon?
- 16 A Right.
- 17 Q Did he appear injured?
- 18 A Oh, yeah. He looked -- he looked like he'd
- 19 been ran through the mill, yeah. He thought he was
- 20 going to die. That's actually how he put it. Says,
- 21 I'm going to die.
- 22 Q Okay. And did his injuries look like that
- was possible?
- 24 A Oh, man, he -- I really didn't pay much --
- see, really, but he -- he looked bloody. I just know

- 1 how bad it was until he got back from the doctor and
- 2 they --
- Q Okay.
- 4 A You know.
- 5 Q Yeah. Okay. While you were on the front
- 6 porch and you said the police had -- had got there,
- 7 could you hear them as they went through the house?
- 8 A Oh, yeah. It's kind of hard not to.
- 9 Q Okay. What -- what did you hear them doing?
- 10 A Well, it's like I said, it was either
- officer or officers, was down there. I believe I saw
- one of them had the baby in his arms and set her on
- 13 the couch.
- 14 Like I said, officer, officers went back
- down the hallway and I'm standing on the front porch,
- 16 you know, just standing there like this. Hadn't went
- 17 to the ambulance yet. Standing there like this.
- 18 And all I hear is, "Put the knife down,
- 19 you're going to get shot." Well, at that point, I
- 20 just said, well, I'm not going to stick around. I
- 21 went back downstairs, heading out toward the street.
- 22 Saw a female officer approach me and then I heard this
- pop. And that's -- ended that.
- Q Okay. All right. Was there -- was there a
- delay or a gap between when you heard the command and

- 1 the pop or was it on top of each other or were they
- 2 right --
- 3 A I -- I would say -- I was probably standing
- 4 at the front porch, probably three, four minutes tops
- 5 before I heard that "Drop the knife or you're going to
- 6 get shot." And I don't know just how long it took for
- 7 the shot to occur after I hit the street.
- 8 Q Okay.
- 9 A But it wasn't very long after that.
- 10 Q But were you on the porch when you heard the
- command, "Drop the knife or you're going to get shot"?
- 12 A Yes.
- 13 Q And you'd made it out to the street when you
- 14 heard the pop?
- 15 A I made it out to the street.
- 16 Q Okay. All right. At any point, could you
- hear what was happening inside of Derrick and
- 18 room?
- 19 A All I -- I heard screaming.
- 21 A Yes, I could hear her --
- Q Where were you when you heard that?
- 23 A I was outside.
- Q In the back or in the front?
- 25 A That was in the front.

- 1 Q You were in the front?
- 2 A Right.
- 3 Q What did you hear her screaming?
- 4 A I really couldn't make it out. She's
- 5 totally hysterical. She's just screaming. Well, she
- 6 did -- I did manage to hear, "My baby, my baby."
- 7 So --
- 8 Q Okay.
- 9 A That's what I thought that -- yeah.
- 10 Q Okay. And the rest was just screaming,
- 11 hysterical screaming?
- 12 A Hysterical screaming, yes.
- MR. JACKSON: Okay. I think that's all the
- questions I have for you, sir. Do the grand jurors
- 15 have any questions?
- I don't see any.
- 17 Thank you very much.
- 18 THE WITNESS: Yep. Thank you. You're
- 19 welcome.
- 20 MR. JACKSON: Come on in. If you could
- 21 stand right here next to the chair and raise your
- 22 right hand.
- 23 LANA EIDE
- 24 Was thereupon called as a witness; and, having been
- 25 first duly sworn, was examined and testified as follows:

1		EXAMINATION
2	BY MR. JA	ACKSON:
3	Q	Okay. You can have a seat.
4		And could you please state and spell your
5	name.	
6	A	Lana, L-a-n-a; Eide, E-i-d-e.
7	Q	Okay. Ms. Eide, on April 29th of 2019,
8	where were you living?	
9	A	Do you want me to say the address or
LO	Q	Sure.
L1	А	
L2	Q	Okay.
L3	А	My grandmother's house.
L4	Q	Okay. Okay. And is your grandmother
L5	Betty Littlejohn?	
L6	А	Yes.
L7	Q	All right. And were you actually staying
L8	inside the house?	
L9	А	No.
20	Q	Where where were you staying on the
21	property?	
22	A	In the motor home on the side of the house.
23	Q	And was that in the front or the back?
24	A	In the front, but on the side.
2.5	0	Front side?

- 1 A Yes.
- 2 Q By the driveway?
- 3 A Right. Yes.
- 4 Q Okay. And who was staying there with you,
- 5 if anybody?
- 6 A My boyfriend was there that night with me.
- 7 Q Okay. How long had you been living in
- 8 that RV?
- 9 A I've been in the RV probably a year. Little
- 10 over a year, maybe.
- 11 Q Okay.
- 12 A Couple years.
- 13 Q At that location?
- 14 A Yes.
- 15 Q Does it run, drive --
- 16 A Yes.
- 18 the time?
- 19 A No, it runs. It drives. Just -- yes.
- 20 Q Okay.
- 21 A But it stays there.
- 22 Q Okay. And so if Betty Littlejohn is your
- grandma, are you related to Derrick Rogers,
- 24 Delbert Littlejohn and Jon Brock?
- 25 A Derrick is my nephew and Jon is my uncle and

- 1 Delbert is my cousin by marriage.
- 2 Q Okay. And do you know Jeb Brock?
- 3 A Yes.
- 4 O And --
- 5 A I don't know him well, but yes.
- 6 Q Okay. Is Jeb Brock Jon Brock's son?
- 7 A Yes. So he's my cousin.
- 8 Q Okay. And if you've been living at the
- 9 house for a year, have the other folks that were
- 10 living there on the 29th, been living there most of
- 11 that time or --
- 12 A No. My nephew just moved in like a month
- 13 before that.
- 14 O Okay. Derrick?
- 15 A Yeah, Derrick. Sorry.
- 16 Q That's okay. Okay. But Betty and Delbert,
- they've been living there?
- 18 A Yes.
- 19 O And Jon as well?
- 20 A Yes.
- Q Okay. And so we'll take you to April 28th,
- 22 that night, into the early morning of April 29th. Do
- you remember coming home on April 28th?
- 24 A Yes. My boyfriend and I came back to the
- 25 house. There was a car in the middle of the street,

- like just parked in the middle of the street, so we
- went around it and parked.
- And, usually, I go in the house, but I
- 4 didn't go in the house, 'cause I just felt like there
- 5 was something eerie. So I went in to the -- my -- my
- 6 motor home and just went to bed. And then --
- 7 Q I'm sorry. You said there's something eerie
- 8 about the house?
- 9 A Yeah, it was just weird. It was just that
- 10 car made us kind of -- it was just out of place, like
- 11 there was just a car in the middle of the street. It
- was weird.
- 13 0 Okay.
- A But the cops came and got the car. We heard
- the cops come and take the car way anyways.
- 16 Q When -- when was that?
- 17 A Oh, probably 1:00, 1:30.
- 18 Q In the morning?
- 19 A Yeah, because I was at -- we were at his
- 20 mom's house before we had -- came to my house, we were
- 21 at his mom's house and fell asleep. And I wanted to
- 22 come home, so we came to my house. It was about -- he
- probably woke me up about midnight. So, yeah, about
- 24 1:00, 1:30, somewhere in there.
- 25 Q I mean, did -- did you call the police about

1	the car?		
2	A	No.	
3	Q	Oh, okay.	
4	A	No.	
5	Q	Do you know who did?	
6	A	I have no clue.	
7	Q	Oh, okay.	
8	A	No idea.	
9	Q	But the police came and took the car away?	
LO	A	The police came and took the car away. And	
L1	we went t	o sleep. And then do you just want me to	
L2	Q	Well, so this car, I mean, where where	
L3	was it?		
L4	A	It's next door. So the car so our house	
L5	is on the	corner and that's our house. So the next	
L6	door neighbor's house. Okay, yeah. It's right in		
L7	front of his house.		
L8	Q	The middle of the street right here?	
L9	A	Yep, just in the middle of the street.	
20	Q	And just for the record, we're looking at	
21	the overh	ead view of and in southeast.	
22	Is this the		
23	A	Yes.	
24	Q	RV that you were living in?	
) 5	7\	Vac	

- 1 Q Okay. And so just something about that car
- 2 creeped you out a little?
- 3 A It was just weird. It was just weird.
- 4 Things like that just don't happen. Just it --
- 5 Q Okay.
- 6 A It wasn't running. It wasn't nothing. It
- 7 was just in the middle of the street.
- 8 Q Okay. So went into the RV, went to sleep?
- 9 A Went to sleep.
- 10 O And then what happened?
- 11 A The next thing I remember is my nephew -- I
- heard pounding on the side of the motor home and I
- thought I was dreaming at first, and so I just ignored
- it for probably a good minute, 'cause I just thought I
- was dreaming.
- 16 And then I -- it -- it clicked that I wasn't
- 17 dreaming. And I, like, heard the urgency in his voice
- and he was pounding on the side of the motor home.
- 19 "Auntie, help me. I'm dying. He stabbed me. Help
- 20 me, dying -- I'm dying. Help me."
- 21 And I couldn't get the door open fast enough
- 22 to get out to help him. And when I opened the door, I
- looked out and he wasn't anywhere. And I said,
- 24 "Derrick, where are you? Derrick, where are you?"
- 25 And he just kept saying, "Help me, please. I'm

- 1 dying."
- 2 Q Did you find him?
- 3 A I went down the stairs and went to the back.
- 4 There's a Cadillac parked in the driveway and my
- 5 grandma's Jeep. And I went to the -- like, there's
- 6 like a walkway between the two of them.
- 7 And I went to it and I got to the end of it
- 8 and I just saw him on the -- I saw him, like, in a
- 9 ball, like just hunched over. The blood was bigger
- than him and he was holding his neck.
- 11 And I went to him, and I said, "What
- happened to you?" And he said, "He stabbed me.
- 13 Please help me. He stabbed me." And so I turned
- around to go in the house to get him some towels to
- put on his neck because he was bleeding.
- 16 Q There's tissues here, ma'am, if you'd like
- one.
- 18 A I raised Derrick, so he's like my kid. And
- 19 so it's really hard. I haven't even -- I've only been
- 20 back to the house one time.
- O Mm-hmm.
- 22 A So I turned around to go back in the house
- 23 to get him some towels or something to put over his
- 24 neck, because his hand wasn't cutting it. And I knew
- I had to get it to stop a little bit before, you know,

- 1 and to tell my grandma to call 9-1-1.
- 2 And I turned and I went to go in the house
- and my Uncle Jon was standing in the doorway and he
- 4 wouldn't let me go in. Now I understand why, but I
- 5 didn't understand why then. And I just yelled at my
- 6 grandma. My grandma was in the front room.
- 7 And I said, "I don't know what's going on,
- 8 but call 9-1-1 right now. He's dying. Call 9-1-1."
- 9 Well, so I turned back around because my uncle
- 10 wouldn't let me in the house, so I turned back around
- 11 to go hold my nephew and help him.
- 12 And I got to the end of the Cadillac, almost
- to him, and the cops were there. And said -- and
- started screaming at me, "Where is he? Where is he?"
- 15 And I didn't -- I had no clue what was going on in the
- 16 house. I had -- I just saw my nephew on the ground,
- 17 bleeding to death.
- 18 And -- and I said, "I don't know what you're
- 19 talking about." And I went to go to my nephew and
- 20 they wouldn't let me. They made be go across the
- 21 street. So I went across the street and my boyfriend
- 22 came out of the motor home to go across the street and
- gave my nephew a towel for his neck so that it could
- 24 help a little bit.
- 25 And then there was just cops everywhere and

- 1 the ambulances finally came. And it took them
- forever, it felt like, to get my nephew out of the
- 3 situation. And when I was standing across the street,
- 4 alls I remember hearing was the gun fires. And then
- 5 right after that, my cousin came out.
- 6 Delbert came out of the house and he went to
- 7 the ambulance. Well, my uncle and my nephew were out
- 8 of the house already and they went to the ambulance
- 9 first.
- 10 O Jon?
- 11 A Yes, Jon.
- 12 Q Jon Brock?
- 13 A Yes.
- 14 O Okay.
- 15 A They were -- he and my uncle was standing in
- the door. And when he saw the cops coming, I'm
- 17 thinking that he came out, because he was already out.
- 18 So they took my nephew and my uncle in the ambulance.
- 19 And then all of a sudden, I saw my cousin come out,
- 20 Delbert come out, holding his leg, I think it was. I
- 21 was very distraught --
- 22 O Sure.
- 23 A -- to say the least. And then I saw my
- 24 niece, which is Derrick's girlfriend, come out of the
- 25 house and she didn't have the baby. And I didn't

- 1 think about it then.
- 2 Q Is that
- 3 A Yes, I didn't think about, Oh, my
- 4 God, the baby. And -- you know, because I just saw my
- 5 nephew dying. And she -- she left, went in the
- 6 ambulance and told the officers to leave the baby with
- 7 me. And we were out there for another probably hour
- 8 and a half before I got the baby and my grandma came
- 9 out of the house.
- 10 Q Okay.
- 11 A I don't know what happened in the house.
- 12 I --
- 13 Q Sure. Now, when you went back up to the
- 14 house and Jon was standing in the doorway, did you
- 15 notice anything about him?
- 16 A I did not notice anything. My blinders were
- 17 on. I don't know like -- I don't know how I would not
- 18 noticed him, because I'm -- from what I'm
- understanding, he was beaten very badly.
- I mean, he might lose his eye, I guess.
- Like I said, I don't know. My -- all's I could think
- about was my nephew on the ground, dying.
- 23 Q Okay.
- 24 A And I looked at my grandma. I looked over
- 25 my uncle at my grandma that was standing in the living

- 1 room. And I just told her, "Call 9-1-1." And I
- 2 turned around and I went back to my nephew. I
- 3 didn't -- I don't know how I didn't see it. I don't
- 4 know. My -- my mind was just on my nephew.
- 5 Q Sure. Okay.
- 6 A I didn't even think about Jeb being in the
- 7 house either, like he's never there, so I didn't even
- 8 -- it didn't even dawn on me that he was the one that
- 9 was -- that could have done this. You know, I just --
- 10 I didn't know what was going on.
- 11 Q Okay. And when you had left that day,
- was -- was Jeb there?
- 13 A No.
- 14 O Okay.
- 15 A No. I hadn't been there all weekend. I had
- my daughter. I have my daughter every other weekend
- 17 and I had her that weekend. And so we were at my
- 18 mom's because I didn't have her Easter.
- 19 And my mom lives in Washington, so we were
- 20 at my mom's. And then Saturday, we came home and my
- 21 daughter wanted to stay the night at her friend's
- 22 house, one of my friend's mutual -- they have kids
- together, anyways.
- 24 And so we stayed there Friday -- yeah --
- 25 Saturday all day. I was there until Saturday night.

- 1 And then I went -- no, I was even there Saturday
- 2 night. Anyways, and then Sunday, I took my daughter
- 3 back home and I went to my boyfriend's house and then,
- 4 didn't come back until that evening.
- 5 Q Okay. So you'd been away from the house for
- 6 a few days?
- 7 A Right.
- 8 Q And you hadn't seen Jeb --
- 9 A I had no clue that he was there.
- 10 Q -- at all?
- 11 A Oh, no, wait. Yes, I had, 'cause I had came
- back for a minute and he was there. And I looked at
- him and he said something to me and I just went in the
- house, shut the door and locked it. And I was only
- 15 there for a couple minutes and then I left to go to my
- 16 boyfriend's house.
- 17 Q When you say the house, do you mean the
- 18 house or the RV?
- 19 A No, my motor home. I'm sorry.
- 20 Q The motor home. Okay.
- 21 A My home, my motor home.
- 22 Q Sure. Okay. Did he -- do you remember what
- 23 he said to you?
- 24 A He said something about drugs or something.
- 25 And I looked at him, I said, "I don't know what you're

- 1 talking about." And I turned around and went in the
- 2 house. I said, "Don't talk to me," 'cause I don't
- 3 talk to him. I don't have -- I don't like him.
- 4 Q Okay.
- 5 A He --
- 6 Q Well, okay. That's fine.
- 7 A Anyways, and so I just shut the door and
- 8 locked it. And --
- 9 Q Okay.
- 10 A -- went about my business. And then I left
- 11 and --
- 12 Q Okay. And when you say that you went across
- the street, do you mean you went across Street
- or you went across
- 15 A Street. Across the street to the
- 16 neighbor's house, yes.
- 17 Q Okay. And so you were standing over here --
- 18 A We were in the driveway.
- 19 Q -- watching --
- 20 A We were actually in that driveway, but yeah,
- 21 yeah.
- Q Over here?
- 23 A Yeah, yeah.
- Q Okay. Kind of watching what was happening?
- 25 A No. I was crying.

- 1 Q Okay.
- 2 A So I really wasn't watching too much. I was
- 3 just worried about my nephew.
- 4 Q Sure. Do you have a sense of how long it
- 5 was once the police got there before you heard the
- 6 shots or --
- 7 A It was not very long.
- 8 Q -- anything?
- 9 A It wasn't very long at all. I would --
- 10 five, 10 minutes, maybe, if that.
- 11 Q Okay.
- 12 A But like I said, time was -- sense of time
- was going to be real --
- 14 O Sure.
- 15 A I don't even -- I -- I don't even know how
- long the whole thing, process was.
- O Mm-hmm.
- 18 A It was a long day.
- 19 Q Yeah. Okay. And so ultimately, the baby
- 20 was given to you --
- 21 A Yes.
- 22 Q And -- and was taken away to the
- hospital?
- to the hospital, pretty much right after each other.

- 1 And then like in -- I would say I -- before I got the
- 2 baby, it was probably a good hour, because I guess
- 3 they had to secure everything or whatever. And then
- 4 once I got the baby, we got --
- 5 Q But Betty -- Betty was inside with the baby?
- 6 A Yes. Oh, yes.
- 7 Q Okay.
- 8 A Yes, my grandma was inside with the baby.
- 9 Q Okay.
- 10 A Yes.
- 11 MR. JACKSON: Okay. All right. Well,
- that's all the questions that I have. Do you folks
- have any questions?
- 14 A GRAND JUROR: Did you hear any shouting
- from inside the house or were you too far away?
- 16 THE WITNESS: No. I didn't hear -- I didn't
- 17 even hear screaming or -- I didn't hear
- 18 anything. But like I said, my -- my blinders were to
- my nephew.
- 20 A GRAND JUROR: Of course, of course.
- 21 THE WITNESS: He's like my kid. And -- and
- 22 to see that is --
- MR. JACKSON: Sure. Okay. Any other
- 24 questions?
- I don't see any.

- Okay. Thank you very much.
- THE WITNESS: Thank you.
- MR. JACKSON: Okay. We're going to go right
- 4 here, ma'am. If you could just have a seat.
- 5 Okay. Are you okay?
- 6 THE WITNESS: Oh, yeah.
- 7 MR. JACKSON: Great. Could you raise your
- 8 right hand and our foreperson will swear you in.
- 9 **BETTY LITTLEJOHN**
- 10 Was thereupon called as a witness; and, having been
- 11 first duly sworn, was examined and testified as follows:
- 12 EXAMINATION
- 13 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 14 Q Okay. That sounds great. Could you please
- 15 state your name and --
- 16 A And I can't hear, so you got to speak up a
- 17 little --
- 18 Q Okay.
- 19 A -- please.
- 20 Q Could you please state your name and spell
- 21 it for us.
- 22 A Betty Littlejohn. Betty Lou Littlejohn.
- B-e-t-t-y, L-o-u, L-i-t-t-l-e-j-o-h-n.
- Q Okay. And, Ms. Littlejohn, do you live in
- 25 this house here at

- 1 A Sure do.
- 2 Q How long have you lived there?
- A 60 years, about, almost.
- 4 Q Six-zero, 60?
- 5 A 60.
- 6 Q Okay.
- 7 A 50, I know.
- 8 Q Okay. And who lives in the house with you?
- 9 A At that moment or now?
- 10 Q Yeah, on April 29th of 2019.
- 11 A On April 29th, my number one son, Jon Brock
- and Delbert Littlejohn and Derrick Rogers and his
- girlfriend and the baby.
- 14 O Okay.
- 15 A And me.
- 16 Q And you. Okay. And in the days leading up
- to April 29th, did Jeb Brock come over to the house?
- 18 A Yes, he did. He came over. I think this
- 19 happened on a Thursday night. I'm not positive on
- 20 that date. But the next day, he came over 'cause my
- 21 son Jon -- he -- Jeb don't live -- I'm not close to
- 22 him like -- he's my grandson, but I don't see him very
- 23 often.
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 25 A And he -- excuse me. He -- Jon asked him to

- 1 come over and help him do a lot of things for him.
- 2 O Around the house?
- 3 A Yeah, like his tools. He had them all in my
- 4 shed and he took them out. Silly kid. And he -- so
- 5 then they're setting here.
- 6 Q Okay.
- 7 A And they -- Jon asked him to come and help
- 8 him put things back away and have to clean up my yard.
- 9 Q Okay. And --
- 10 A And next, he went home that night.
- 11 O Jeb did.
- 12 A I thought he did. Under my estimate, he
- went home. And he's a -- I said to him -- and he came
- back the next morning to do the same thing.
- 15 And I said -- that night, I said, "Jeb,
- 16 you're homeless. Why do you want to go and sleep on
- 17 the sidewalk like you say and -- and no place to be?
- 18 Stay all night with grandma and help Jon finish
- 19 this up."
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 21 A And so I guess he decided to do that.
- 22 Q Okay.
- 23 A And we were all sleeping when this happened.
- 24 Q Okay. So when you went to sleep the night
- before, was there anything strange going on?

- 1 A Not a bit. In my house, people just live
- like we always done, our family. That's all my
- 3 family --
- 4 O Mm-hmm.
- 5 A -- that was here.
- 6 Q Okay. And so you went to sleep?
- 7 A What?
- 8 Q You went to sleep?
- 9 A I went to sleep.
- 11 A Oh, no, not rightly, but probably I go to
- bed between 8 o'clock and 10:00.
- 13 Q Okay.
- 14 A And I went to bed. And I figured I just let
- everybody do their own thing, you know. They're big
- 16 people.
- O Mm-hmm.
- 18 A And so I went to sleep. At a quarter to
- 3:00, I got up to go potty and I still didn't hear a
- thing going on.
- Q Okay. Everybody seemed to be sleeping?
- 22 A Well, I have a hard time hearing, but I can
- 23 hear people talking. I can hear you talk, but I can't
- 24 understand what you say.
- Q Mm-hmm.

- 1 A So I didn't hear anything. And so I went
- 2 back to bed, turned on my television, 'cause I usually
- wake up that time of morning. I don't get out of bed
- 4 always until 7:00.
- 5 Q Okay.
- 6 A But I'll watch TV and all of a sudden, I
- 7 heard all kinds of noise. I got up to see what was
- 8 happening and I saw -- and my house is like this and
- 9 there's a bedroom and there's a bedroom and there's a
- 10 bedroom.
- 11 And then there's a hall and then the front
- 12 room. And I come out to this little hall. And, "Oh,
- my God, "I said, "Jeb, what are you doing? What are
- 14 you doing?" He's in Delbert's bedroom. He has that
- 15 little bedroom.
- And he was pushing the door. They were in
- 17 there fighting or something. I can't see through the
- 18 door, but I can see him in there. 'Cause I guess
- 19 Delbert said, I don't know, picked up --
- 20 Q Well, don't tell us what you've heard, just
- 21 what you saw.
- 22 A Oh, well, this is what he -- he said he had
- 23 throwed him against the wall in there. And when I got
- 24 up --
- Q Did that look like what was happening?

- 1 A -- I could hear them pushing the door back
- and forth. They're shutting it, he's opening it.
- 3 They're pushing in that -- in that little hall.
- 4 Q So -- so Derrick's at the door trying to
- 5 open it?
- 6 A He's trying to open it to help Delbert.
- 7 O Uh-huh. And Jeb was in there?
- 8 A And they're -- they're both in there. And I
- 9 said, "Jeb, Jeb, what in the world are you doing?"
- Jeb, I'm trying to quiet him down, you know, whatever.
- O Mm-hmm.
- 12 A And so they went back and forth. I'd hear
- that noise, in door, slam, in door, slam, all night.
- O Mm-hmm.
- 15 A No, not all night, just while I was standing
- 16 there.
- 17 Q Uh-huh.
- 18 A And --
- 19 Q Okay. What happened then?
- 20 A The -- I remember him -- Derrick popped the
- 21 door open and Derrick come and -- I mean, of -- so
- 22 many Ds in my house.
- 23 Q Yeah. Was it Delbert?
- 24 A Delbert getting out and Derrick is a-pushing
- down the hall out to the backyard. "Get out, get

- out," he says. "Get out of -- go out to the backyard.
- 2 Get out of here." And while he's a doing that, Jeb
- 3 got into --
- 4 Q One of the other bedrooms?
- 5 A Derrick's bedroom.
- 6 Q Derrick's bedroom. Okay.
- 7 A Into Derrick's bedroom.
- 8 Q And were you still standing in your doorway?
- 9 A I was still there.
- 10 Q Okay?
- 11 A And so I -- and now, Derrick just goes out
- of his head. He says, "Grandma, my baby's in there,
- my baby's in there." I says, "I know. We're going to
- tend to this." I'm on the phone all the time trying
- 15 to call the policeman.
- 16 Q Okay.
- 17 A I -- I don't know what -- I said, "Help,
- 18 help, help, help. Some maniac is going crazy in this
- 19 house."
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 21 A I -- I --
- 22 Q And were you still standing there?
- A And they came quick. Well, anyway, I don't
- 24 exactly know when this all happened, but I'm standing
- in there watching this door go back and forth, 'cause

- 1 now --
- 2 Q With Derrick? Trying to go into Derrick's
- 3 room, you mean?
- 4 A No, 'cause Derrick is on the outside pushing
- 5 and Jeb is in the inside trying again on this door.
- 6 Q Okay. What happened then?
- 7 A Well, I saw Derrick -- you know my house is
- 8 just getting full blood. Blood, blood, blood. And
- 9 they -- and I hadn't gone out to the front room yet.
- 10 And I had stayed in the hall when I heard this pushing
- 11 back and forth of doors and all that.
- 12 And the next thing I know is Derrick's got
- his throat cut and blood coming out. And so we went
- outside and that's when he went over to where Lana was
- 15 at that trailer.
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 17 A And he says, "Lana, help, help." You know,
- 18 gosh, there's Derrick all mess of blood. And I saw
- 19 him set down on the back of my -- of my Jeep on the
- 20 curb.
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 22 A I saw the policeman a-coming at that time.
- 23 They came so quick, thank God. And then I come back
- in the house and the policemen are following me,
- 25 moving me out of the way.

- 1 And he says -- I have no idea what happened
- 2 after that, because I -- he made me -- he wanted to go
- 3 to the garage. He pushed me down trying to get out
- 4 there. He helped me up and -- and set me down on my
- 5 couch.
- 6 O Mm-hmm.
- 7 A On the couch.
- 8 Q Mm-hmm.
- 9 A And the baby -- shortly, I'm setting there
- 10 just -- the policeman is standing -- I have a
- 11 parrot -- and he was standing right by the parrot --
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 13 A -- the one that was trying to get to the
- garage, but didn't. I don't know what happened after
- 15 all of that. A policeman must have went in to quiet
- 16 Derrick, try at -- Jeb down or what happened in there,
- 17 I don't know.
- 18 Because I'm a-talking to this policeman
- that's standing there. He says, "You set right
- 20 there." And, of course, I do. I don't get around
- 21 fast.
- 22 Q Okay.
- 23 A And pretty soon, the girl -- I can't think
- of her name right now.
- Q The baby?

- 1 A No, the baby -- not the baby, the mama.
- 2 Q Oh,
- 3 A
- 4 Q Yeah.
- 5 A Yeah. She come out and set the baby right
- down beside me. And the policeman had already left my
- 7 front door wide open and it was in the morning.
- 8 O Mm-hmm.
- 9 A And so after that, I pushed -- I grabbed
- 10 whatever I have there, a blanket that I lay over my
- lap at night or day, all the time. Hundred degree out
- and I'll leave the blanket over me.
- O Mm-hmm.
- A But anyway, I picked it up to put around us,
- 'cause the baby was cold and so was I.
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 17 A And that's the last I remember 'til they
- 18 picked me up and moved me next door to the people over
- 19 there.
- 20 Q Okay.
- 21 A And the ambulance came in. Oh, then I saw
- 22 my son was setting -- Jon --
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 24 A -- was the one that -- a bloody mess. He
- was a bloody mess.

- 1 Q Mm-hmm. Where did you see him?
- 2 A When I -- by the time I got out of that
- 3 little hall and the policeman set me down out there on
- 4 the couch.
- 5 Q Where was --
- 6 A Jon was setting on the couch right over
- 7 there. So he had to go past Jon before he got -- and
- 8 what happened, I don't know what made him all go that
- 9 way. I have no idea.
- 10 O Mm-hmm.
- 11 A I can't even put it in my head --
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 13 A -- at why he would do such a thing.
- 14 O Yeah.
- 15 A Can you -- I can't imagine anybody. I would
- think that if it was you, something would have to set
- 17 you off. Right?
- 18 Q Yeah. I -- I don't know. Yeah.
- 19 A And I would think so. And what had
- 20 happened, I don't know. Delbert decided he wanted to
- 21 wash clothes about 2:30 or 3:00 in the morning and so
- 22 he had to go out and wash. I don't know what, if they
- 23 said something that made him mad or what. I don't
- 24 know --
- 25 Q Okay.

- 1 A -- what happened, but now it's happened. I
- 2 thought the policeman would come and -- I had to get
- 3 him to stop that. I don't call the police too much,
- 4 but something like that is -- had to be -- I couldn't
- 5 handle.
- 6 0 Sure.
- 7 A I have eight boys of my own and so I can
- 8 control them and tell them by talking to them, but Jeb
- 9 and all these -- I don't know what -- my grandkids,
- 10 not my own.
- 11 Q Okay.
- 12 A It's always my grandkids or my great
- 13 grandkids.
- MR. JACKSON: All right, ma'am. Well, thank
- 15 you very much. That's all the questions I have.
- Do you folks have any questions?
- I don't see any.
- 18 Okay. Thank you very much.
- 19 THE WITNESS: Thank you.
- 20 A GRAND JUROR: Thank you.
- 21 THE WITNESS: And my -- my son, Jon.
- 22 MR. JACKSON: Yes. Need a hand?
- THE WITNESS: Oh, I made it.
- MR. JACKSON: Okay. Any time.
- THE WITNESS: Thank you.

- 1 MR. JACKSON: Sure. All right.
- Why don't you have a seat.
- We'll bring you back in in just a sec.
- 4 THE WITNESS: Okay.
- 5 MR. JACKSON: And we can go off the record
- 6 while we take a quick --
- 7 (Recess taken, 3:04 p.m. 3:07 p.m.)
- 8 MR. JACKSON: All right. We're back on the
- 9 record following our bathroom break and we're ready to
- 10 proceed with our next witness.
- 11 Right here. If you could stand there and
- 12 raise your right hand.
- JON L. BROCK
- 14 Was thereupon called as a witness; and, having been
- 15 first duly sworn, was examined and testified as follows:
- 16 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 17 Q Okay. You can have a seat.
- 18 And could you please state and spell your
- 19 name.
- 20 A Jon, J-o-n; Brock, B-r-o-c-k; middle
- 21 initial L.
- 22 Q Okay. And, Mr. Brock, would it help you if
- 23 I move to your other side so you could hear me better?
- 24 A No. This is the ear I can't hear from. So
- 25 just if I could turn.

- 1 Q Okay.
- 2 A Who asked the question?
- 3 Q I did, sir.
- 4 A Yeah, if I can just turn.
- 5 Q Would it help if I moved over there?
- 6 A No, I can hear you.
- 7 Q You can hear me? Okay.
- 8 All right. So could you please state and
- 9 spell your name? Oh, you did already. I'm sorry.
- 10 Okay. So if you see this residence here on
- 11 the screen,
- 12 A Yes, I recognized it.
- 13 Q Yeah. Is that where you live?
- 14 A I am -- I was, yes.
- 15 Q How long were you living there?
- 16 A I've been there a couple of years now, a few
- 17 years.
- 18 O Okay. And who lives at the residence with
- 19 you?
- 20 A Well, I had a trailer, so I wasn't really in
- 21 that residence. It changed. Depends on what
- 22 grandkids were around.
- 23 Q Okay.
- 24 A But mom was there and Delbert, generally,
- and then a variety of kids.

- 1 Q And is your mother Betty Littlejohn?
- 2 A Yes.
- Q Okay.
- 4 A I'm the oldest of her nine kids.
- 5 Q Of her -- nine kids. Okay. The trailer
- 6 that you were living in, is that in the front of the
- 7 house or the back of the house?
- 8 A In the backyard.
- 9 Q Backyard.
- 10 A It was in the back of the house.
- 11 Q Okay. On April 29th of 2019, were you still
- staying in that trailer or were you living inside the
- 13 house at that point?
- 14 A I think at that point, I had moved into the
- 15 house.
- 16 Q Okay. And in the days leading up to
- 17 April 29th, do you remember Jeb Brock coming over to
- 18 the house?
- 19 A The only thing I have a memory of is he was
- 20 helping me pick up tools. I was trying to straighten
- 21 up in the backyard. The wind had blown the tarp and
- 22 knocked things about and he was helping me pick up
- 23 tools. And -- and I can't even tell you what day that
- 24 was, particular. And I -- that's the only thing I can
- 25 remember.

- 1 Q Okay. And was it common for him to come
- 2 over to see you?
- 3 A No, it was not.
- 4 Q Okay.
- 5 A I think he had been over the last time about
- 6 Thanksgiving of the last --
- 7 Q Of the year before?
- 8 A Yeah.
- 9 Q Yeah. Okay. And so you have this memory of
- Jeb coming over to help you with the tools?
- 11 A Well, he just came by. He didn't come for
- that purpose. It just I had asked him to help a
- 13 little while he was there. And I don't even know
- exactly why he had come by.
- 15 O Okay. And is Jeb your son?
- 16 A Yes, my oldest.
- 17 Q Your oldest son? Okay. What is your next
- 18 memory?
- 19 A My next memory was waking up in the hospital
- 20 and the -- my daughter was there and the detective
- 21 telling me that they had shot my son.
- 22 Q Okay.
- 23 A I don't remember what led up to it. I don't
- 24 remember what transpired. I don't remember how I even
- got to the hospital.

- 1 Q Okay. When you woke up in the hospital, do
- 2 you remember what condition you were in?
- 3 A Confused. I mean, I really still didn't
- 4 even realize what had happened.
- $0 \quad Mm-hmm.$
- 6 A I felt it, though.
- 7 Q Yeah. Were you injured?
- 8 A Yeah. I guess somehow, I got a 10-pound
- 9 hammer in the face.
- 10 Q Okay.
- 11 A It broke me up pretty good.
- 12 Q Okay. And we can see today you have a patch
- over your --
- 14 A Well, I can't close my eye, so I have to put
- 15 lubrication on it and keep it covered for -- 'til they
- 16 -- the surgeon -- I think they said plastic surgeon
- would put a little tuck in the corner so that I could
- 18 close it.
- 19 Q Okay.
- 20 A I can't hear out of this ear. It's not
- 21 about wax or anything, but it -- and they put a metal
- 22 plate here in my face. I thought at first maybe he
- 23 had cut me because I heard something about he cut
- someone else, just, I heard.
- Q Mm-hmm.

- 1 A But actually, the surgeon told me this is
- where they had cut me to -- to get in to repair my
- 3 jaw.
- 4 Q Oh, okay.
- 5 A I didn't even know --
- 6 Q On your -- on your neck?
- 7 A Yeah. I didn't even know what was what.
- 8 Q What had happened?
- 9 A Yeah.
- 10 Q Okay. And how are you doing today?
- 11 A Well, I lose track of things pretty good. I
- mean, I'm all right. I'm getting better. But my face
- is still numb from about all this. I drool all over.
- 14 Q Do the doctors expect that to come back?
- 15 A The doctor said the facial nerves were
- impossibly damaged and the swelling, so just watch it
- for another few weeks and see. But as far as my -- I
- 18 had no dentures. They were broken. And -- and I have
- 19 to wait like eight weeks more, about for them to
- 20 settle down 'til I can get new dentures.
- Q Okay.
- 22 A So I'm pretty slow on that.
- 23 Q Yeah. And were you wearing dentures at the
- 24 time?
- 25 A Yes.

- 1 Q And complete set?
- 2 A The bottom -- yeah, upper and lower. The
- 3 bottom one is, I have half of. I don't know where the
- 4 other piece went. And I've been wearing my upper
- ones, because the bottoms don't (indiscernible).
- 6 Q And was it common for you to take your
- dentures out, like at night to go to sleep?
- 8 A I never -- no, no, never even. I take them
- 9 out and brush them, put them right back.
- 10 O Okay.
- 11 A I always -- ever since I've had them, 12, 15
- 12 years, I never took them out at night.
- 13 O Okay.
- 14 A And I don't even know where any of this
- 15 happened, if I was outside or -- I mean, I don't -- I
- 16 didn't even know where I was.
- 17 Q Mm-hmm. Okay. Let's see.
- 18 A That's confusing, good or bad. It's good
- 19 for some things, but I would have liked to -- well --
- 20 MR. JACKSON: Okay. All right, sir. Well,
- I think that's all the questions that I actually have
- for you.
- Do the grand jurors have any other
- 24 questions?
- 25 A GRAND JUROR: No.

- THE WITNESS: Yeah. If I could tell you
- 3 more, I would.
- 4 MR. JACKSON: Okay. Well, thank you very
- 5 much, sir.
- 6 THE WITNESS: You guys have a blessed day.
- 7 A GRAND JUROR: Take care.
- 8 THE WITNESS: And be safe. We're here for
- 9 understanding. I mean, not -- I mean the world. You
- 10 guys have a blessed day.
- 11 MR. JACKSON: Thank you very much.
- 12 Okay. If you could stand right there and
- 13 raise your right hand.
- 14 AARON RIZZO
- 15 Was thereupon called as a witness; and, having been
- 16 first duly sworn, was examined and testified as follows:
- 17 EXAMINATION
- 18 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 19 Q Okay. You can have a seat.
- 20 Would you please state and spell your name.
- 21 A My first name is Aaron, A-a-r-o-n. My last
- 22 name is Rizzo, R-i-z-z-o.
- 23 Q And where do you work?
- 24 A I'm employed as an officer with the Portland
- 25 Police Bureau.

- 1 Q And how long have you been a Portland police
- 2 officer?
- 3 A Two-and-a-half years.
- 4 Q What's your current assignment?
- 5 A I am assigned to east precinct, which is
- 6 East Portland, night shift, which is 10:00 p.m. to
- 7 8:00 a.m.
- 8 Q And were you working that shift on
- 9 April 29th of 2019 or the 28th into the 29th of 2019?
- 10 A Yes, sir, I was.
- 11 Q Okay. And when you're working, are you in
- 12 full uniform, badge displayed?
- 13 A Yes, sir, I am.
- Q And are you in a partner car or are you by
- 15 yourself?
- 16 A I am by myself.
- 17 Q Could you describe the patrol vehicle that
- 18 you operate?
- 19 A I was -- that night, I was in a 2017 -- it's
- 20 a Ford Explorer. We call them FIUs. Fully marked,
- 21 says Portland Police on the side, lights on the top,
- 22 big push bumper, any -- typical of any Portland police
- car that you see out there.
- 24 Q Okay. And you said two-and-a-half years
- with Portland police?

- 1 A Yes.
- 2 Q Did you have law enforcement experience
- 3 before?
- 4 A Yes, I did.
- 5 Q Where was that and for how long?
- 6 A I was a patrol deputy with the Hillsborough
- 7 County Sheriff's Office down in Tampa, Florida for
- 8 six-and-a-half years.
- 9 O Okay. Do you remember what district you
- 10 were working that night?
- 11 A Every night, I work the -- we call it the
- 70s district. My unit number was 977. So I work the
- 13 971 district. They pair the odd numbers together.
- 14 So -- and that area is typically like 122nd, the
- 15 western side, north side being Division, the east side
- being 136th and the south side being Holgate.
- 17 Q Okay. That was your district?
- 18 A Yeah, that's the rough parameters of my
- 19 district.
- 20 Q And you guys would refer to that as the 70s?
- 21 A Yes.
- 22 Q Okay. And you've been working that district
- for how long?
- 24 A Over a year and a half.
- Q Okay. Were you by yourself in that

- district? Are there other officers that work that
- 2 district with you?
- 3 A Yes. There's one other officer working
- 4 with me.
- 5 Q Okay. Who was that?
- 6 A Officer Andrew Young.
- 7 Q Okay. And do you guys stay together or are
- 8 you in different parts of -- of that area you just
- 9 described?
- 10 A Yep. Different parts, just kind of doing --
- 11 there's -- the larger part of that district is all the
- way to 82nd, so it just kind of extends out westward.
- 13 So we just -- we have a lot of real estate to cover,
- but we just kind of stay separate unless it's a bigger
- 15 call where they'll dispatch both of us at the same
- 16 time.
- 17 Q Okay. And so on your kind of typical shift,
- 18 you would just be responding to calls for service --
- 19 A Yep.
- 20 Q -- throughout the night?
- 21 A Yes, sir.
- 22 Q Okay. And it's just the two of you for that
- whole area?
- 24 A Yes.
- Q Okay. Do you recall on April 29th of 2019

- 1 around 4:15 in the morning, a call for service coming
- 2 out for
- 3 A Yes, sir, I do.
- 4 Q Do you remember where you were when that
- 5 call came out?
- 6 A Yes. I was actually getting like a water
- 7 and a bathroom break at a contact office we have on
- 8 117th and Market, which is just north of Division.
- 9 O And is that address in your district?
- 10 A I think it's Officer Young's district, but
- it's all part of 70s, yes.
- 12 Q Okay. And so being Officer Young's actual
- patrol district, did you respond or not?
- 14 A I was dispatched, yes, and I responded.
- 15 Q Okay. What was your understanding of the
- 16 call as you -- as you began responding?
- 17 A The call came out as a stabbing in progress,
- 18 which is -- obviously sounded pretty serious. I go to
- 19 my car, immediately started running lights and sirens.
- 20 I knew very roughly where this was, so I'm not really
- looking at my computer so much as I'm just trying to
- 22 get there as fast as I can.
- 23 And dispatch is kind of giving us updates
- that we have multiple callers now saying that there's
- 25 multiple people that have been stabbed, that there was

- a baby inside the house, and that the stabbing was
- 2 ongoing.
- 3 Q Okay. What's going through your mind at
- 4 that point as these updates are coming in?
- 5 A The biggest concern for me was that it
- 6 wasn't -- the information was that there's active
- 7 stabbing going on, which is like an active threat, so
- 8 no different than if you had, unfortunately, like a
- 9 mall shooter.
- If somebody's actively harming somebody,
- 11 you want to get there and your first order is to stop
- that threat, whether it's somebody with a knife or a
- gun or a baseball bat.
- 14 There had been some talk on the radio prior
- to my arrival of like staging, like kind of maybe
- north and kind of getting all our resources together,
- 17 but --
- 18 Q What does that mean, staging?
- 19 A So staging would be like on, say, here
- where the house is, we'd stage maybe like a block
- 21 north in a not dynamic scenario like this, get some --
- get a bunch of cars together, hey, okay, this our
- plan, this is what we're going to do.
- 24 Somebody's going to go cover the backyard.
- 25 Somebody's going to go -- this will be a contact team,

- 1 this will be the arrest team. However, in this
- 2 situation, I made the decision to say, hey, this is
- 3 active. We're not staging.
- We're going to get as many officers to the
- front of the house as possible and as soon as we get
- 6 three or four of us, which is like a good contact
- 7 team, we're going to go inside and -- and stop this
- 8 threat.
- 9 Q Okay. That's what's going through your mind
- 10 as you're coming in?
- 11 A That's what I voiced over the radio, too.
- 12 Q Okay. And did you receive any pushback from
- other officers, hey, no, we really ought to stage
- and -- and get a plan together?
- 15 A No. Officer Gonzalez had arrived about
- 16 probably 20 seconds before me, and he was walking up
- 17 to try to get eyes on. And I made that decision
- 18 probably a hundred yards from the house as I'm like
- 19 screaming down 132.
- 20 So it was all within probably a 10-second
- time area of me saying, we're not staging. Go to the
- front of the house and then me arriving. So it was
- 23 all really, really close. There was no pushback.
- 24 And I think me voicing that, okay, yeah,
- 25 this is like -- this kind of a different situation.

- 1 This is dynamic. This is happening right now. People
- 2 are still being hurt by whoever's doing the hurting.
- 3 Q Okay. You said Officer Gonzalez got there
- 4 ahead of you?
- 5 A Yes, sir.
- 6 Q And did you hear an update from him once he
- 7 arrived at the scene?
- 8 A He -- the only thing I heard was that he's
- 9 like, "Hey, I parked and I'm walking up on foot." And
- I was probably 10 seconds out from that. So as I'm
- 11 pulling up, he's kind of turning the corner.
- 12 Q If you want to come up to the screen.
- 13 A Okay. I'm sorry.
- 14 Q That's okay.
- 15 A When I came up, I was coming down -- south
- on I saw Officer Gonzalez kind of right here on
- 17 the corner. And then I knew this was the house, so I
- 18 came and parked like maybe right here. So me and
- 19 Officer -- I pulled up in my car at the same point as
- 20 Officer Gonzalez is walking up on foot.
- Q Okay. And you jump out of your car?
- 22 A Yes.
- 23 Q And what did you take with you?
- 24 A I'm certified and trained to carry a
- 25 40-millimeter less lethal launcher. I don't know if

- 1 anybody's ex-military in here, but it is a -- thought
- 2 maybe you had a picture.
- 3 Q Just give me one sec here. How many
- 4 millimeters did you say?
- 5 A It's 40-millimeter.
- 6 Q Okay. What do we see on the screen here?
- 7 A So this is -- this is what I carry during my
- 8 patrol shifts. I carry it every patrol shift by
- 9 policy and by training. It's a 40-millimeter less
- 10 lethal launcher. It holds two rounds, which are
- 11 2-ounce blue-tip sponge rounds. They fire at
- 12 approximately 225 miles an hour.
- I can only load up one at a time here.
- 14 There's a red dot sight and then there's a light on
- 15 it. Those are the only things on the -- on this
- 16 contraption. Before my shift, I check -- I check the
- 17 less lethal launcher, because we share them, so we
- 18 take out different ones each shift, depending on
- 19 what's available. I check all my rounds as well.
- 20 Q Okay. And the two on the butt stock, is
- 21 that the only two rounds you have?
- 22 A No. I also carry an additional five on a
- 23 scabber on my left-hand side, so I have a clip that
- 24 clips around my leg right here. So it's got an
- 25 additional five rounds. The way our training is is

- 1 that whenever I deploy my less lethal munitions, the
- 2 first round comes out of my leg holster.
- 3 I'll load that up first and then the next --
- 4 as you deploy your next rounds, you want to come from
- 5 the ammunition holder on the -- the butt stock,
- 6 because you're quicker to get there. But that first
- one, they want you to come from there.
- 8 And then your two additional rounds would be
- 9 from there and then any additional from your -- your
- 10 leg holster.
- 11 O Okay. And when you are driving around in
- 12 your patrol shift and you have this weapon system with
- 13 you, is it loaded so when you grab it and go or is it
- 14 you have to load it before you can --
- 15 A I have to load it before I go. I keep it
- unloaded in my car and I keep the sight off. When I
- 17 get out of my car, I'll turn the sight on, 'cause it's
- 18 battery powered.
- 19 And then I'll load up a round from my leg
- 20 holster first if I'm going to deploy it. That being
- 21 said, I've -- when I take it out of the car on a
- 22 call -- if I -- even if I don't look -- even if I
- don't use it, I always load up a round in preparation
- 24 of using it, but I don't always take it out of my car
- on every call.

- 1 Q Okay. So when you're actually going to
- deploy the 40-millimeter, you said it's one round
- 3 loaded --
- 4 A Yes.
- 5 Q Appears from this photograph, it's a breach
- 6 loading system?
- 7 A Yes.
- 8 Q And so can you take us through the process
- 9 of actually loading, firing, taking out the expended
- 10 cartridge, putting the new one in and firing again.
- 11 A Sure. Let me just use this.
- 12 Q Sure.
- 13 A When I get out of the car, I'll usually kind
- of get myself situated. I'll sling it. I'm
- right-handed, so I sling it over my shoulder so I
- 16 can -- it can rest and I can have my other hands free.
- 17 I'll take a single round out of my -- the
- 18 holster on my left leg. There's a breach loading
- 19 system, so there's like a little push button. It's a
- 20 very simple device. It's just like a push. You push
- it with your thumb and then it opens up like an old
- 22 shotgun.
- I can load in one single around at a time.
- 24 It can't take more. One round is the maximum it can
- take. Once it's loaded up, I close it up and I'll

- 1 turn on the -- the sight.
- 2 And I usually just click it to, like, four.
- 3 So -- my vision's fine, so it's just a red dot sight.
- 4 But it makes it extremely accurate. Once I'm loaded
- 5 up, it's a -- it's a double-action trigger, so it's
- 6 like -- it's -- there's a trigger back here. And so
- 7 it's in a long pull, right?
- 8 It's not like a -- when you pull the
- 9 trigger, it's probably maybe -- maybe a half an inch
- or an inch of actually like moving your finger, so you
- can't really accidentally deploy it. When you're
- 12 pulling that trigger, it's deliberate and it's -- it's
- 13 a strong pull.
- 14 Q Okay. And then once you've deployed it, how
- do you then reload it for another shot?
- 16 A What I'll do is I'll use the same latch
- 17 opening system. I'll pop it open with my left hand.
- 18 I'll usually take out the expended cartridge. For the
- 19 next round, I'll pull it right out of here.
- 20 You can kind of see the tip of the back of
- 21 the -- what I'll do is you can actually see where I
- 22 pulled it out of here and then load it up into the --
- into the 40 mill for an additional shot.
- 24 Q And so in order to do that, you actually
- 25 have to take -- take the 40 mill off target, breach

- it, take out the round, put the new one in, close it
- 2 and then reacquire the target?
- 3 A Yes, sir.
- 4 Q How long does that process take, do you
- 5 know?
- 6 A Under pressure, I mean, it's five to seven
- 7 seconds.
- 8 Q Okay. So essentially, you can only fire one
- 9 round every five to seven seconds then?
- 10 A Yeah, max.
- 11 O Max.
- 12 A There's probably people who can do it
- faster, but that is where I think my comfortable --
- 14 without dropping a round or kind of fumbling with it,
- 15 just five to seven seconds.
- 16 Q Okay. All right. Thank you.
- 17 A You're welcome.
- 18 BY A GRAND JUROR:
- 19 Q Officer, when you said you put the sight on
- 20 four, could you explain that.
- 21 A Yes, sir. So on the very, very top, you can
- 22 kind of see, it's marked. They're actually marked
- 23 with numbers. One and -- so one and two are kind of
- 24 low.
- 25 The light -- the lights, the dot on the red

223

- dot is not very bright. Three is turned off. Why
- 2 they make three to turn off -- I didn't design it.
- 3 But when I turn it to four, that turns the red light
- 4 on and it's good for me to see.
- 5 Q It's maximum?
- 6 A To nine.
- 7 O Nine maximum?
- 8 A To go brighter. The red dot on the sight
- 9 can be brighter at nine. Four works for me. Four is
- 10 what I've always trained with, so that's what I'm
- 11 comfortable using.
- 12 Q So it's not altering the focus. It's --
- 13 A Just altering the -- the brightness of
- 14 the dot.
- 15 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 16 Q And what is the range of the 40-millimeter
- 17 launcher?
- 18 A It's good 'til probably 35, 40 yards to get
- 19 any kind of good strike.
- 20 Q Accuracy?
- 21 A You definitely lose some accuracy. There's
- 22 only -- right, it's -- the power behind it's going to
- 23 lose over -- over that distance, it's going to lose
- power.
- 25 A GRAND JUROR: Lose impact?

1	THE WITNESS: Definitely going to lose
2	impact. But it's got far its its range is far
3	better than anything else that we have to reach out
4	and touch somebody beyond a taser or pepper spray.
5	MR. JACKSON: Okay. You oh, was there
6	another question?
7	A GRAND JUROR: What's the ideal distance?
8	THE WITNESS: No ideal distance, but if
9	you're using it, I mean, seven to 15 yards is going to
10	be really good. It's when I trained with it, I was
11	shocked at its accuracy.
12	I mean, it is extremely accurate. You can
13	point and shoot. So but obviously at a greater
14	distance, the accuracy is going to diminish by just
15	your delays and the round maybe losing its air it's
16	not the round's about this big.
17	A GRAND JUROR: Right.
18	THE WITNESS: It's going to lose some
19	aerodynamic there's going to be changes in the
20	wind, but that is what it looks like. And the the
21	black and blue part are the parts that come off.
22	A GRAND JUROR: And fire down range?
23	THE WITNESS: Yeah, and fire down range.
24	The the silver part at the bottom is just the
25	propellant behind it and the loading cartridge.

1	A GRAND JUROR: Is there a point on the
2	other end of the range where you don't want to deploy
3	something like this because you're too close?
4	THE WITNESS: Absolutely. Yeah, you don't
5	want to you want to avoid using it anything closer
6	than five or seven feet, 'cause again, you're still
7	it's still two ounces and it's still it's a heavy
8	duty impact. So
9	A GRAND JUROR: It becomes not so less than
10	lethal?
11	THE WITNESS: It can be, yes. So the
12	desired the desired striking points are so
13	desired striking points are going to be sternum to the
14	tops of the knees, avoiding the groin area.
15	Anything else could be considered like if
16	I if you hit somebody in the head, it would be
17	lethal force no matter the distance. So when we
18	deploy it, we specifically deploy it to strike those
19	areas of the body that are within our policy and
20	within our training.
21	BY MR. JACKSON:
22	Q Okay. And so I was going to ask actually,
23	why you've been referring to this as a less lethal
24	weapon system as opposed to a nonlethal weapon system,
25	right?

- 1 A Yes.
- 2 Q It does have lethal capabilities, but if
- 3 used properly within training, it would not be lethal
- 4 or less lethal?
- 5 A That is correct.
- 6 Q Okay. And your training would be as you
- described to only strike somebody between the sternum
- 8 and the knees and avoiding the groin?
- 9 A Yes.
- 11 A Yes.
- 12 Q Chest, upper chest?
- 13 A Could be lethal force, yes.
- 14 Q Okay. Are there any questions about that?
- 15 Okay. When you got out of your car and grabbed this
- 16 40-millimeter launcher, why did you do that? Why did
- 17 you think that was an appropriate thing to do?
- 18 A The fact that the call involved somebody
- 19 with a knife. This would be -- this is a perfect tool
- 20 for that. Somebody with a knife that would have to
- 21 move towards you.
- I could keep them away if I needed to deploy
- it. In another situation, somebody with a knife, I
- 24 can -- we can keep our distance, right, 'cause
- 25 distance is our friend. Distance gives us more

- 1 options.
- 2 So if I'm able to keep somebody away from me
- or other officers at 10 or 15 yards, that gives us
- 4 more times to come up with more plans, more options,
- 5 use other tools, negotiate, but it keeps that
- 6 stand-off distance increased.
- 7 And hearing somebody with a knife call, I
- 8 felt that this tool was definitely -- could be used or
- 9 might be appropriate. And rather have it and not need
- it than, you know, not have it and need it.
- 11 Q Is part of the training for the utilization
- of a 40-millimeter launcher also to be used as a pain
- 13 compliance tool?
- 14 A Yes.
- 15 O And what does that mean?
- 16 A Like -- like any tool that we carry, our
- 17 goal is to get compliance or take somebody into
- 18 custody if they're not being compliant. That is what
- 19 this tool is used for.
- 20 Somebody's not being compliant, but
- 21 presenting an active threat or threatening to hurt
- 22 somebody or actively hurting somebody, this is a
- really good tool to use.
- I've never been shot by it, but I've seen
- 25 the force behind it and it -- it looks like it's going

- 1 to hurt. And pain compliance makes people comply.
- 2 It's -- that's an unfortunate part of our jobs, but
- 3 that's -- that's our goal here.
- 4 Q One of the ways that it can be used to
- 5 actually end an active threat --
- 6 A Yes.
- 8 A Yes. It's been used successfully before.
- 9 Not by me, but I have seen it. It's been used and it
- 10 is successful.
- 11 Q Okay. And how long have you been certified
- as a less lethal launcher operator?
- 13 A March of this year. March 3rd or 4th, I
- 14 went to the class. So I went to the training class
- 15 very recently.
- 16 Q Okay. So you get out of the car and you
- 17 grab your 40-millimeter launcher. What did you do
- 18 then?
- 19 A I load up. Officer Gonzalez was -- came up
- 20 next to me. Also, I'm seeing -- as -- as I pulled up,
- I can see that there's a male in the driveway. He's
- 22 bleeding profusely from his head and neck area.
- 23 Within about five seconds, Officer Young and Sergeant
- Mooney had also pulled up.
- 25 And I think I'd even voiced over the radio

- 1 that I wanted, like, three or four people with us
- 2 before we started to -- to go towards the house, but
- 3 like I said, within the time it took me to get out of
- 4 my car and, like, load up was the time that we had all
- four people there, so a very, very, very short amount
- of time before we made -- before we went in.
- 7 O And who were the officers that were
- 8 with you?
- 9 A Officer Gonzalez, Sergeant Mooney and
- 10 Officer Young.
- 11 O Okay. And yourself?
- 12 A And myself.
- Q And were there any other less lethal
- operators among those four or just you?
- 15 A Just me.
- 16 Q Okay. And when you bring your 40-millimeter
- 17 launcher, do you also have your side arm or handgun?
- 18 A Yes. I'm loaded up with my taser, my baton,
- 19 my OC spray and my firearm.
- 20 Q And OC spray, is that --
- 21 A Pepper spray.
- A Yes.
- Q Okay. What was the plan?
- 25 A Well, the first thing that was difficult to

- do was we had to bypass the injured person. Like I
- 2 said, the first step in any kind of active threat call
- 3 is stopping the threat.
- 4 And that does mean bypassing injured people,
- 5 because imagine what can be done in two minutes or
- 6 three minutes or even 30 seconds by a motivated and
- 7 dangerous person.
- 8 Q You mean were you to stop and render aid?
- 9 A Yes. So we did not stop and render aid. As
- 10 I'm walking -- as we -- we're like hey, this is the
- 11 house that we need to go to. This is the house that
- the 9-1-1 call is coming from.
- Multiple 9-1-1 calls. This is also the
- house where there's an injured person and now there's
- 15 like an elderly lady kind of standing in the driveway.
- Just to kind of paint a picture, the driveway was
- 17 pretty narrow.
- There's two cars parked side by side, so for
- 19 us to actually get to the front door of the house, we
- 20 had to kind of walk in a single-file line and this
- 21 elderly lady was standing, like right there. So we
- 22 were trying to like kind of get -- move her nicely so
- we could actually get to the front door of the house,
- 24 which was wide open. And there's blood on the ground
- and blood trailing.

- 1 Q Into the house?
- 2 A Yes. Or by the front door as we walked up.
- 3 Q Okay. Were there any other people around
- 4 the driveway area that you were aware of?
- 5 A Just the elderly lady and then the injured
- 6 male --
- 7 Q Okay.
- 8 A -- that I remember.
- 9 Q Okay. When you got up to the door, were you
- 10 guys still in single file or had you kind of grouped
- 11 up?
- 12 A We got to the door. The door was open and
- we just kind of -- I don't think we're ever lost
- 14 momentum. We just went straight into the house.
- 15 Q What did you see once you got in that door?
- 16 A Once we got into the door, it opened up to a
- 17 living room. There was blood -- I could see a lot --
- 18 quite a bit of blood on the floor, fresh blood. There
- 19 was a male sitting on the couch to my right, which
- 20 would be like the west side of the room. He appeared
- 21 pretty injured.
- He wasn't -- couldn't give a lot of
- 23 information. Just maybe -- he was trying just to kind
- 24 of stay conscious. So at this point, the last update
- we had had from dispatch or the 9-1-1 callers, really,

- was that somebody was being stabbed, there was a baby
- 2 in the house.
- 3 People were still being stabbed and now
- 4 we're in the house. So this gentleman, clearly
- 5 injured, just wasn't able to give us any information,
- 6 so we know now that we have to kind of -- we have to
- 7 clear this house, find out -- figure out what's
- 8 going on.
- 9 O And what does that mean when you say clear
- 10 the house?
- 11 A So we're going to methodically and safely
- kind of go through the house room by room, door by
- door, trying to find the threat and then if it's gone,
- we can control the scene from there or stop the threat
- if it's still active and ongoing.
- 16 Q Okay. How did you guys do that?
- 17 A To give you an idea, so the living room --
- 18 we're in the living room, which opens up -- it's one
- 19 big room that opens up into the kitchen area. And
- 20 then there's just one single hallway on the left. So
- 21 you can only move south through the house, directly
- towards the -- oh, perfect. May I use this?
- Q Of course, yeah. I was just going to say
- there's a line diagram up here if that would help.
- 25 A I appreciate that. So we came -- we moved

- into the house in here. So now it's myself,
- 2 Sergeant Mooney, Officer Gonzalez and Officer Young.
- 3 Officer -- or Sergeant Mooney gave out -- he yelled
- 4 out, "Portland police" or something to that effect to
- 5 let people know that we were -- the police were here
- and we're in the house and they need to come out.
- 7 Q Is that standard procedure?
- 8 A Yes.
- 9 Okay.
- 10 A So we -- this is basically our, hey, the
- police are here. If you're going to give up, give up,
- but we're coming to come and find you. No surprises
- on their part. We don't want there to be any
- 14 confusion about who's in the house, who's opening
- doors.
- 16 Q Did somebody come out after that warning?
- 17 A No response, nothing. The house is actually
- 18 quiet, which was unnerving. So since I'm using --
- 19 both hands are using my less lethal and this is
- 20 somebody with a knife, Sergeant Mooney and Officer
- 21 Gonzalez are going to move -- were going to move down
- the hallway together and then I'm going to have
- 23 Officer Young -- this back, sliding glass door was
- 24 open, right, to a backyard, which was unknown at the
- 25 time. So --

1	Q	You	mean	nobody	had	looked	back	there	for
2	threats o	or ped	ople?						

- A No, no. And typically, what you want to do
 is you want to contain your search areas, right? So
 if we want to do the house first and then if the house
 was clear, then we're going to move to the backyard.
- 7 But we -- we don't want people in two different places, right, 'cause in a -- in a bad -- in 8 a different situation, say, that there was cops in the backyard here searching and the bad guy was here and 10 11 we shot out the window, we could hit one of our own, so we want to know where all our officers are at the 12 same time and we want to make sure that where we're 13 14 searching isn't -- there's nobody in a dangerous 15 backdrop.
- So I asked Officer Young, I said, "Hey, hold that back door." Which, there was also a door to the garage here, which was also unknown.
 - O What does that mean, hold the door?

19

20 A So I had him just kind of stand in this area 21 right here with his firearm out. So basically he's --22 if, say, the threat was in the backyard or the threat 23 decided to come back into the house, he could address 24 that threat and he's protecting us as we're moving 25 away, right?

- 1 Q Down the hall?
- 2 A Down the hall. There was more officers
- 3 coming into the house or moving into the scene, but
- 4 again, this is -- everything from beginning to end is
- 5 under a minute-and-a-half, so it's a lot of -- a lot
- of movements and a lot of thinking, but in a
- 7 compressed amount of time.
- 8 We move as three, Sergeant Mooney, Officer
- 9 Gonzalez and myself third. They clear -- so
- 10 they're -- we're opening doors that are closed. We're
- 11 not sure what's in these doors.
- We don't know if it's a bedroom, closet. We
- don't know the layout of the house. The -- the --
- this is kind of hard -- weird, but the hallway's
- 15 longer than this.
- 16 But these first two doors on the left are
- 17 closets, empty -- or closets filled with clothes. And
- then we get down to basically it's like a T
- 19 intersection, so it's bathroom -- bathroom door
- 20 closed, bedroom door open, bedroom door closed,
- 21 bedroom door open.
- 22 Q Just for the record, you're indicating the
- 23 room that's labeled on this diagram, Betty
- 24 Littlejohn --
- 25 A Yes.

1	Q door open.
2	A Yes. Also bathroom door closed, Betty
3	Littlejohn, door open. Derrick Rogers,
4	door closed. Delbert Littlejohn, door open.
5	Bathroom Sergeant Mooney, to my recollection, opens
6	the bathroom door. It's just a bathroom. Cleared
7	very, very quickly, seconds.
8	This door, also open. Kind of move
9	Sergeant Mooney, I think before Officer Gonzalez moved
10	in, cleared the bedroom. Right. It's dark. It's
11	clearly an empty bedroom.
12	There's nothing jutting off of it or any
13	sounds from people inside these bedrooms. When you're
14	clearing a house, you want to work you want to work
15	the open door first, right? We can cover a closed
16	door, right?
17	Okay, the door's closed and if we can leave
18	it closed for now and then we'll get to the closed
19	door last. This door right here, Delbert Littlejohn's
20	room, open, cleared very quickly.
21	We're standing right here in this hallway,
22	we hear I hear or we hear a, like a single yell
23	coming from this bedroom, Derrick Rogers and
24	

Q What is a male voice, female voice?

25

- 1 A Couldn't tell. Just a yell.
- 2 O Words?
- 3 A No. Just --
- 4 Q Just sound?
- 5 A Just a loud yell.
- 6 Q Okay.
- 7 A So based upon everything that we have seen
- 8 now, okay, there's people in this room. There's
- 9 people, actively stabbing, we need -- we need to make
- 10 sure everybody in this room is okay.
- 11 Sergeant Mooney, I believe, goes to open the
- door. So now it is Officer Gonzalez is kind of
- 13 standing to his left, Sergeant Mooney and then I'm
- 14 kind of tucked back a little bit closer to the
- 15 bathroom here, because again, that's my -- I don't
- 16 have a lethal weapon this time.
- 17 Easy accessible, like they -- they have
- 18 their firearms out. Sergeant Mooney opens the door,
- 19 six, 10 inches, maybe 12. Door stops. My first
- 20 thought is -- I'm a parent. I see a Pack 'n Play. I
- immediately, oh, that's a Pack 'n Play and I see
- there's a baby inside the Pack 'n Play.
- I tell Gonzalez, "Hey, he's close." I mean,
- 24 he's like -- Pack 'n Play is like probably this high
- and he's standing on top of it, right, but he's -- I

- 1 can tell that he's looking into the room.
- Baby is like down by his feet. So I say,
- 3 "Hey, Gonzalez, grab the baby." Lightning quick, he
- 4 grabs that baby and he disappears out of my sight for
- 5 ten seconds. I don't know where he goes with the
- 6 baby.
- 7 I know he hands it off to somebody safe,
- 8 because he came back, but he was able to get that
- 9 baby. Now, the door that -- the room is very -- very
- 10 cluttered. The Pack 'n Play was all the way open, and
- 11 so --
- 12 Q You mean it was set up into a playpen?
- 13 A It was fully set up open and it wasn't like
- it could slide out of the way. It was stuck against
- 15 something. Like we couldn't just push it out of the
- 16 way. It was stuck.
- 17 So I know that -- so Sergeant Mooney now, I
- 18 can see that he's addressing -- he's yelling at
- 19 somebody in the room, "Show me your hands." I -- I am
- 20 able to kind of -- I tell him, "Hey, let me get my
- 21 less lethal up."
- I look in the room. There's two people
- 23 laying on the bed. What I first see is a -- there's
- 24 a -- their heads are here on the pillows with their
- feet down by the end and they're facing towards the

- 1 door, which would be north.
- I see a female and then I see a male behind
- 3 her. Now, the male is -- he's got her like wrapped up
- 4 in his arms and he's also holding a full-size butcher
- 5 knife to her chest. He's screaming, "Kill me. I'm
- 6 going to kill her." He's got -- I mean, he's got the
- 7 knife against her chest.
- 8 Very, very intense situation. As soon as I
- 9 look in, I could see that -- and the female's very
- 10 petite. I could see that his left leg is exposed
- 11 probably from here to here.
- So I tell -- I lean in and I fire one round
- with my 40-millimeter, 'cause my goal right now is --
- he's clearly already harmed people and he's clearly
- intending on harming her.
- We can't get into this room right this
- 17 second because of this barricade. So I want to get
- 18 pain compliance, I want him to drop the knife and I
- 19 want to buy us some time. The first shot struck him
- in the leg, 'cause I saw him, you know, pull his leg
- 21 back and he kind of hunkered down.
- I didn't give him any warnings. I didn't
- let anybody know I was firing off a round except for
- Sergeant Mooney. So he doesn't accidentally think
- 25 that I'm firing my service weapon.

- 1 He knows -- 'cause I said, "Less lethal up,"
- but I didn't give him, the bad guy, a warning, because
- 3 I don't want him to be able to conceal himself or
- 4 conceal himself any better or use her as a shield.
- 5 So that was my major concern at the time,
- 6 because he's already using her as a shield. He's
- 7 already got the knife to her throat. He's already
- 8 making stabbing motions against her and telling her
- 9 that he's going to kill her and wants us to kill him.
- 10 So I wanted to tip the scales in my favor as
- 11 much as I could without giving any warnings to him.
- 12 So I fire off that first round, strike him in the leg.
- 13 Q Let me just ask a quick question.
- 14 A Yep.
- 15 Q So you've described that at this point, the
- door could only open six to 12 inches?
- 17 A Yes.
- 18 Q Which is not very big.
- 19 A Not very much.
- 21 vests on?
- 22 A Yes.
- 23 Q And so there's quite a bit of equipment on
- the tactical vests, right?
- 25 A Yes.

- 1 Q If you were to lean in through that gap in
- the door, could you have actually entered the room
- 3 through it or was it too -- too narrow?
- 4 A Too narrow. I -- if I remember correctly,
- 5 I -- 'cause I'm not very tall. Sergeant Mooney's
- 6 taller than me.
- 7 I had gotten -- kind of gotten into a
- 8 crouch, so he was actually, I think, able to even stay
- 9 on point and I was able to kind of get down and under
- 10 him as I leaned in; but, no, it was not -- it would
- 11 not have been wide enough for even me, who's not very
- 12 big, to get through that door.
- 13 Q Okay. And you described there were three of
- 14 your at the doorway?
- 15 A Yes.
- 16 Q Officer Gonzalez, you and Sergeant Mooney?
- 17 A Yes.
- 18 Q How -- how were you positioning or
- 19 repositioning yourselves to allow that to happen, you
- to get up to the doorway to fire that round?
- 21 A Yeah. It's super tight. It's really,
- 22 really, really tight over here. And I know that
- 23 Sergeant Mooney's, like, I could feel him against me.
- 24 And then Officer Gonzalez is to my left.
- 25 And he's kind of between this doorway and,

- like, my back as I'm using -- as I'm telling Sergeant
- 2 Mooney, "Hey, I'm going to deploy my less lethal." So
- 3 we're super tight in this spot and even when I'm
- 4 deploying and Sergeant Mooney might have to come off.
- 5 Like we're only kind of one of us in the
- 6 doorway at a time. He might be looking over me. I
- 7 can't speak to that, but it's extremely tight.
- 8 Tight fit.
- 9 Q Okay. So are the lights on in the room?
- 10 A Lights are on in the room.
- 11 Q The overhead lights?
- 12 A Yeah.
- 13 Q Okay.
- 14 A So the room is bright.
- 15 Q No problem seeing?
- 16 A No problem seeing.
- 17 Q Okay. Did you guys have -- so you said the
- less lethal launcher has a flashlight attachment?
- 19 A Yes.
- Q Was that on?
- 21 A No.
- 22 Q You didn't have it on?
- 23 A I don't think so.
- 24 Q Okay.
- 25 A So I deploy --

- 1 Q Let me ask you this.
- 2 A Yes.
- Were the lights on in the rest of the house?
- 4 A I believe the lights off -- lights were off
- 5 here and in Littlejohn's room, in Betty Littlejohn's
- 6 room. But like, lamps. It's four o'clock in the
- 7 morning, so just kind of like smaller house lights.
- 8 Q Okay.
- 9 A Lamps are on. But this room was light.
- 10 Q Okay.
- 11 A Okay. So during this time, Sergeant
- Mooney's giving commands. He's telling, "Drop the
- 13 knife, let her go." And Sergeant Mooney's very calm,
- very, very cool, very calm, giving authoritative
- 15 commands, but there's no -- no screaming on his part.
- 16 He's just giving him clear, concise, drop the knife,
- 17 let her go commands.
- I -- after I fire my first round, I step out
- 19 of the doorway so Sergeant Mooney can get a much more
- 20 clear picture. Now he's kind of sucking up that
- 21 space. I take out the spent cartridge. I take out a
- 22 round from the butt stock, which -- as I'm trained and
- I load it back up.
- 24 And load it back up, close the breach and I
- tell Sergeant Mooney, "Hey, I'm going to take another

- 1 shot." So we're still not able to get into this room.
- 2 They're messing with the door, but it's just -- it's
- 3 stuck. It's a really messy room. The Pack 'n Play's
- 4 wedged up against stuff.
- 5 And it's not like it can be -- the stuff's
- 6 like high, 6 feet high. So I lean back in. The guy,
- 7 the person who I shot the first time clearly knew what
- 8 I was going to do this time. He -- he'd covered
- 9 himself with the female. He was hugging her still
- 10 tight and nothing's changed, right?
- 11 O Still had the knife?
- 12 A Still had the knife. Nothing has changed
- about his demeanor and what he's doing. While the
- first strike did maybe buy us time, it didn't change
- 15 his attack on her. And at this point, like, I mean,
- 16 he's -- he's clearly intending to kill this person or
- 17 hurt them as much as he can.
- I do the same thing. I get low. I lean
- 19 back in. I was aiming for his left hip, which was
- 20 exposed. I fire off a round and it looked like I had
- 21 struck the female in the stomach when I fired it,
- 22 because like I said, he's got her pulled in tight.
- When I do pull the trigger, I had a shot on his left
- hip, but things had changed in that microsecond
- 25 between them moving on the bed. But it was a shot I

- 1 felt confident taking at the time and I'd do it again.
- 2 O But it hit her?
- 3 A It did hit her. I could see her flinch.
- 4 Q Okay.
- 5 A It's hard to see the direct hit, but I could
- 6 see the -- from how her body kind of convulsed, I felt
- 7 that I had hit her.
- 8 Q Did it appear to you that she was trying to
- 9 fight him or moving around or trying to get away
- 10 from him?
- 11 A She was definitely moving around, but he had
- her. She's petite and he was a bigger guy and he had
- her tied up pretty good in like a bear hug around her
- 14 upper body and had -- like they were kind of -- and
- they were, like, wedged against this area of the bed.
- I mean, he was -- and they were at the back end of
- 17 this bed.
- 18 Q By the wall, you mean?
- 19 A By the wall. Excuse me.
- 20 Q Okay.
- 21 A So I step out again and I reload a third
- 22 round now into my 40 mill. Sergeant Mooney gets down
- 23 low and he's able to get his hands -- I don't know how
- 24 he did it, but he was able to like flip the Pack 'n
- 25 Play into the room.

1	How he did it, I don't know. He but
2	looked like he got really low and then flipped it up
3	high and it kind of like tumbled into the room. This
4	gave way to the door being able to open up more so
5	that the three of us could make entry.
6	Officer Gonzalez so I'll call this like
7	the hard corner. So he takes the first spot into this
8	bedroom. He's hugging the wall. He moves right up to
9	the bed. Sergeant Mooney moves up next to him and
10	then I move up third.
11	I'm on the this far side of the bed,
12	sitting next to Sergeant Mooney. I'm still staying
13	married to my less lethal. I didn't want to change to
14	my firearm or a different tool. I still felt this was
15	the best and most accurate tool I had and the best for
16	the situation. And
17	Q Would it take time for you to change away
18	from the less lethal at that point to a different
19	tool?
20	A Yes, it would. I mean, I'd have to I
21	mean, I could sling it and pull my taser out, but I
22	didn't feel the taser was accurate enough. It was
23	actually not accurate enough, but it wouldn't be the
24	tool for the job. OC or the pepper spray can kind

25

of go either way.

- 1 Again, I'm looking for like immediate
- 2 compliance. I want to stop the threat. That can
- 3 still take five or 10 seconds to kind of get going.
- 4 It could also affect the rest of us in the room.
- 5 So that's the last thing I want to do is
- 6 deploy something that's going to affect my vision,
- 7 other officers' vision or what's going on.
- 8 Q And you already had lethal cover from
- 9 Officer Gonzalez and Sergeant Mooney.
- 10 A Yeah. Sergeant Mooney and -- sorry,
- Officer Gonzalez. They had the firearms. They're
- 12 providing lethal cover.
- 13 Again, with the 40-millimeter, my thought
- process is, if something changed, right, I've got this
- 15 tool right here. Say he lets her go, but he still has
- 16 a knife. I've got my tool ready to go.
- 17 If another -- another shot for me to take
- 18 appeared, I'd have my tool ready to go. So I didn't
- 19 want to, like, take it out -- take it out of the fight
- 20 when I still had two officers for lethal cover.
- 21 And I didn't feel that any other tool on my
- 22 belt could give me the kind of advantage that the
- 40-millimeter gives me.
- 24 Q All right.
- A As we're in the room 10 seconds, five to 10

- 1 seconds still giving commands, suspect is -- I mean,
- 2 he's got the knife. I mean, I can see the knife,
- 3 like, poking.
- 4 This is one of those things you remember.
- 5 But, like, I could see it, like, causing a divot in
- 6 the skin from it being pushed against her chest plate,
- 7 up against her throat.
- I thought he was going to kill her. Like,
- 9 this is it, like he's going to -- he's going to kill
- 10 her. Within five or 10 seconds, I just hear one loud
- 11 bang. I see the suspect go limp and I see the female
- 12 kind of like roll off the bed. We kind of pulled her
- off the bed.
- 14 The -- I clearly knew it was a quishot. I
- 15 was like deaf, stone deaf for like 10 seconds. I just
- 16 couldn't hear anything. I know I got on the radio and
- 17 I was like, "Hey, shots fired, suspect's down. We're
- 18 getting the victim out, " something along those lines.
- 19 I don't -- I asked Gonzalez, "Did you fire?" And he
- 20 said yes.
- 21 And then Sergeant Mooney said, "I also
- 22 fired." So they must have fired at the same time,
- because, to me, what I only heard was one loud bang.
- I could see that the suspect that was holding the
- 25 knife, there was blood and brain matter against the

- 1 back wall. And it appeared to be a lethal wound.
- 2 Sergeant Mooney, once the female was off the
- 3 bed and out of the room, the suspect was still holding
- 4 the knife. Sergeant Mooney leaned onto the bed and
- 5 just pulled the knife off, out of his hand and onto
- 6 the floor. Just out of training, we just don't
- 7 want -- we don't want him holding a weapon.
- And it appeared lethal to me; but, again,
- 9 wounds can look different. Don't know. Knife goes to
- 10 the floor, Sergeant Mooney and Officer Gonzalez kind
- of exit the room. In my head, I'm like, okay, this
- 12 is -- he appears deceased. This is a pretty serious
- 13 situation. So I'm kind of going into like crime scene
- 14 mode.
- 15 Like okay, so Officer Sarah Burns was in the
- 16 hallway as I'm like, oh -- she -- I don't know how
- 17 long she was standing there for, but she was standing
- 18 right in the hallway in the doorway. When I turn
- 19 around, I tell her, "Hey, hold this room. Like this
- is a crime scene, like stay here.
- 21 Don't let anybody in or out that's not a
- 22 detective or somebody that needs to be here." I
- didn't see Sergeant Mooney or Officer Gonzalez more
- than them sitting in their cars.
- I didn't talk to them. As I'm walking out

- 1 the hallway, I see Officer Livingston and she's with
- 2 the female who was just being held or attempted to be
- 3 murdered.
- 4 And I could see -- she lifted up her shirt
- 5 and I could see a bruise or a welt like kind of on her
- 6 stomach by her belly button. And I said I was sorry,
- 7 'cause I'm going to own up for my actions and what
- 8 decisions I made.
- 9 So I said, "Hey, I'm really sorry about
- 10 that." She said it was -- I can't remember, it's okay
- or -- crazy. So I tell a sergeant that -- a different
- 12 sergeant, Sergeant Searle that I was in the room and
- 13 what my involvement was and he told me to wait to be
- interviewed and talked about. So everybody was out.
- 15 People were transported.
- Officer Burns relayed to me that she felt --
- she thought that the suspect that had been shot was,
- 18 like, agonal breathing. I don't know how else to
- 19 refer. But, basically, his brain's -- it's just
- automatic body responses to breathing, but he's not
- 21 actually, like, living.
- He's just kind of breathing, death
- 23 breathing. I told -- I knew that EMS was going to be
- 24 coming in, so I think they -- EMS, I guess, would come
- in and check him. I wasn't there for that and I

- didn't render any aid that I felt that would be
- 2 pertinent to my training.
- 3 Q Okay. And were you separated off?
- 4 A Yep. I was separated off and I sat in my
- 5 patrol car 'til I was interviewed.
- 6 Q Okay. All right. When you guys -- when the
- 7 door is just barely open --
- 8 A Yes.
- 9 and you're leaning in and looking, were
- 10 you able to see her face?
- 11 A Yes.
- 12 O Okay. And what did it look like?
- 13 A Fear, terror, absolute terror. Yeah, I
- think -- can't explain it any other way than the face
- that somebody would have if somebody was actively
- holding a butcher's knife to their chest and stabbing.
- 17 So I'm -- yeah. Absolute, abject fear.
- 18 Q Could you hear him saying anything other
- 19 than what you previously described when you guys first
- 20 encountered him or engaged him, I'm going to kill her,
- 21 kill me? Any other statements you heard him make?
- A Nope. Just the, "I'm going to kill her,
- 23 kill me."
- 24 Q And were those statements ongoing? Was he
- repeating them or did he just say it once and that

- 1 was it?
- 2 A I think it was ongoing. He'd said it
- 3 multiple times during this encounter, which again,
- 4 only lasted 30 to 45 seconds. I mean, maybe it's
- 5 even -- it's hard to describe time in an event like
- 6 this, but 30 to 45 seconds.
- 7 And, I mean, I'm enhanced -- I'm ECIT.
- 8 Sergeant Mooney's ECIT. I was a hostage negotiator
- 9 for two years at my old agency.
- 10 Like I've been on fairly critical incidents
- 11 prior to this, but this -- this was not a negotiating
- 12 situation. This was not a talk-our-way-out-of-it
- 13 situation. This person was intent on -- he had
- 14 already caused extreme harm and he was intent to -- to
- 15 cause harm to the female.
- 16 Q Okay. When you say ECIT, what is that?
- 17 A So myself and Sergeant Mooney are both
- 18 enhanced crisis intervention officers, so we went
- 19 through a 40-hour class detailing everything of kind
- 20 of street diagnosing mental health issues, but also up
- 21 to negotiating in -- in a prior to like a -- a
- 22 call-out, but teaching us how to work as a team, as
- 23 like a -- to talk to a barricaded person or a hostage
- 24 situation to give us the confidence and the skills
- 25 to -- to pick up the phone and try to work -- work out

- 1 these things before they get worse, I guess.
- 2 Q Okay. Now, you said that this was not a
- 3 situation where negotiating would have been
- 4 appropriate or kind of talk your way out of it I think
- 5 is how you put it.
- 6 A Yes.
- 7 Q You did, though, describe that Sergeant
- 8 Mooney was calmly giving commands and orders --
- 9 A Yes.
- 10 Q -- to drop the knife and let her go.
- 11 A Yes.
- 12 Q How would -- how's that different than what
- you're describing in terms of negotiations or talking
- 14 your way out of it, that kind of thing?
- 15 A Yes, absolutely. So Sergeant Mooney just --
- he's giving commands, right? He's telling somebody
- 17 what he wants them to do. Upon us opening that door
- 18 to the room and his screaming, "Kill me, I'm going to
- 19 kill her with the knife," the -- it's already
- 20 elevated, right? It's as high as it goes.
- 21 This is like as dangerous a situation as it
- 22 gets. We're just trying to get compliance. That's
- 23 why I, within seconds, deployed my less lethal and
- 24 wanted to deploy it again. He'd already, based upon
- what we had seen coming on arrival and injured people,

- 1 like he'd clearly done harm.
- 2 And this wasn't a -- this wasn't a time to
- 3 sit back and we couldn't -- there was no ability for
- 4 us to slow things down. By slowing things down, would
- 5 have gotten somebody killed, would have got her
- 6 killed. And the mood wasn't like a, hey, like just
- 7 talk about this, you know, tell me what's going on
- 8 today.
- 9 No. This was dynamic. This was happening
- right now. I mean, he's holding the knife. He's
- 11 gesturing with it. He's stabbing her in the chest.
- 12 He's poking her. He's got it to her throat. She
- 13 looks absolutely terrified.
- 14 There just -- there's no time. It was -- it
- 15 was happening right then and there and there was just
- 16 no -- I just -- I keep going back to it, but there was
- 17 just no time to even slow things down. All we could
- do was just try to get compliance by giving commands
- 19 and deploying less lethal.
- 20 And then once we were in the room and things
- 21 aren't changing and he's still using the knife against
- her and he's still making threats to kill her and
- 23 then, for us to kill him, that it didn't lead -- there
- 24 was no other option. We'd exhausted -- we exhausted
- 25 all the options and we tried them.

- 1 Q Okay. And ultimately, lethal force?
- 2 A Yes.
- 3 Q Okay. When you came into the room, you've
- 4 described that there was stuff everywhere --
- 5 A Mm-hmm.
- 6 Q -- even to the point that this Pack 'n Play
- 7 couldn't even slide enough out of the way to get the
- 8 door open.
- 9 A Yeah.
- where the three of you were lined up?
- 12 A Not three feet. I mean, we were like
- 13 sucked -- I mean, we were touching each other. It is
- hard to go back and remember, but I feel like that
- 15 like -- Officer Gonzalez was like either like, where
- 16 this pillow is.
- 17 I mean, we were all like within probably --
- if this is the bed from -- I mean, we're probably
- 19 taking up as much space as this desk, just kind of
- 20 keeping ourselves kind of bladed, but we're all --
- 21 we're on top of the bed. I mean, we're as close as we
- 22 can get. And they're sucked up against this wall over
- here.
- 24 Q Were you close enough actually to reach out
- and touch the bed from where you're standing?

- 1 A Yeah, I felt the -- yeah. I could feel it
- 2 against my legs just --
- 3 Q Oh, so you're right against the bed?
- 4 A Yeah, we're right against the bed. We're
- 5 like touching the bed, but he is just -- I mean, he's
- 6 got her -- I mean, they're in the far corner of the
- 7 bed by this back top corner. And I mean, he's just
- 8 got her all tied up.
- 9 MR. JACKSON: Okay. How --
- 10 A GRAND JUROR: Two of them are like right
- 11 here?
- 12 THE WITNESS: Sergeant Mooney and Officer
- 13 Gonzalez?
- 14 A GRAND JUROR: Yeah.
- 15 THE WITNESS: Yeah. They are right up here
- 16 next to the bed. And then I'm --
- 17 A GRAND JUROR: And you're kind of under,
- 18 through, behind?
- 19 THE WITNESS: No. I'm -- I was able to
- 20 get -- I was on the farthest, so --
- 21 A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
- 22 THE WITNESS: Officer Gonzalez here,
- 23 Sergeant -- I don't know if you guys can see --
- 24 Sergeant Mooney right here and then me, third. We're
- all against the side of the bed, but we're all right

- 1 next to each other.
- Now, we're all -- we're not spread out. I
- mean, we are like -- it's tight. It's really, really
- 4 tight. And with all our gear on, I mean, we're all
- 5 just kind of -- and the room was very -- like, there
- 6 was just stuff everywhere.
- 7 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 8 Q Do you remember, is that a twin bed,
- 9 queen bed?
- 10 A I think, queen bed. It seemed relatively --
- it looked like a queen sized bed.
- 12 Q Okay.
- 13 A That's what I have. I mean, it looked the
- same size as my bed.
- 15 Q Okay. And they're on the back side of the
- 16 bed?
- 17 A They are -- yes. They are into the corner.
- 18 A GRAND JUROR: His back is against the back
- 19 wall?
- 20 THE WITNESS: Yeah, they're very, very, very
- 21 close to that -- that back wall.
- 22 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 23 Q So is the bed big enough that even with your
- 24 legs kind of touching the sides of the mattress as you
- described, you couldn't reach out and touch him or the

- 1 female?
- 2 A I -- not safely, no. I don't think I could.
- 3 It never -- never occurred to me. I don't think we
- 4 happen close enough to touch.
- 5 Q Okay. So yeah. It wasn't a twin bed then.
- 6 It was -- it was a larger bed?
- 7 A Yeah.
- 8 Q Okay. All right. I think that's all the
- 9 questions I have.
- 10 Yes.
- 11 A GRAND JUROR: Did the lady say anything,
- the woman say anything? Do you remember her saying
- any -- yelling anything?
- 14 THE WITNESS: During the event?
- A GRAND JUROR: Mm-hmm.
- 16 THE WITNESS: No, sir, I do not.
- 17 A GRAND JUROR: Now, you hit him in the leg
- 18 first?
- 19 THE WITNESS: Yes.
- 20 A GRAND JUROR: And then the second shot got
- 21 her in the stomach?
- THE WITNESS: Yes.
- 23 A GRAND JUROR: Prior to the firearms going
- off, did he move so that you guys had -- had a
- decision to take a shot?

- 1 THE WITNESS: I don't know. I mean, they
- were moving around on the bed. I can't speak to what
- Officer Gonzalez and Sergeant Mooney saw, 'cause
- 4 they're standing in different places and they're also
- 5 holding -- and holding firearms, but he obviously
- 6 clearly exposed his head enough that they felt
- 7 confident to take the shots.
- 8 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 9 Q But, I mean, what you described when you
- 10 were trying to just acquire a target with your less
- 11 lethal launcher, was that -- even that was difficult
- because he had her laying basically covering his whole
- 13 body?
- 14 A Yes.
- 15 Q Did that change once you got into the room?
- Were you able to see more of his body exposed or was
- 17 he still effectively using her as a shield?
- 18 A He's still using her as a shield, but I
- 19 think that he had -- he -- he lifted his head up and
- 20 exposed his head. 'Cause now -- where before, we were
- 21 kind of relegated to that look -- basically, if you
- think about it, we were opening the door, he's kind of
- looking at us through the door.
- So his point of what he's looking at now has
- 25 changed drastically now from him looking at the six to

- 1 10 inches of three cops trying to get through the door
- is now three cops around the bed.
- 3 So I can't -- I can't speak to his -- his
- 4 thought process, but obviously, things were changing
- 5 for him rapidly.
- 6 Q Now, your point of view is different.
- 7 Instead of looking that way, now you're looking down?
- 8 A Yes. Now I'm looking down and I'm still not
- 9 seeing any --
- 10 A GRAND JUROR: And you're more toward his
- 11 feet?
- 12 THE WITNESS: I'm more toward his feet -- or
- more toward their feet, but I'm not seeing any part of
- 14 his body from my end, like exposed, but again, for
- five to 10 seconds, I'm just kind of looking now for
- 16 any opportunity.
- 17 A GRAND JUROR: And your training with the
- less lethal, you're trained not to go for a head shot?
- 19 THE WITNESS: That is my training. However,
- 20 in this situation, it by policy would have been
- 21 allowed, right, because it's a deadly force situation,
- 22 but my training is no, do not, unless the -- meets the
- 23 requirements for deadly force, which this did, but I'm
- 24 still not taking -- I did not take a head shot, but it
- would have been allowed.

- 1 A GRAND JUROR: But -- but through your
- training, you're probably looking for other targets?
- THE WITNESS: Yeah. I'm still looking to
- 4 hit those big body shots.
- 5 A GRAND JUROR: Can you remind me what they
- 6 were? Sternum and then what? Was it the full leg or
- 7 just knees up or --
- 8 THE WITNESS: No. I mean, the area you want
- 9 to hit most is from knees to sternum. These are like
- 10 your big muscle groups.
- 11 A GRAND JUROR: And where did you hit him on
- 12 the leq?
- 13 THE WITNESS: I struck him -- it looked like
- 14 I struck him somewhere above the knee, kind of like in
- this knee area, 'cause I saw kind of like pull his leg
- back. But, again, at that distance, I mean, it's
- 17 still firing out.
- 18 It's almost you can't see it, but just,
- 19 that's what I was aiming at and that's what it looked
- 20 like I struck. But -- and then the second shot did
- 21 strike her when I was aiming for his hip.
- 22 A GRAND JUROR: When you -- after this was
- 23 all over and you were -- you were the last to leave
- 24 the room, it sounds like?
- THE WITNESS: Yes.

- 1 A GRAND JUROR: The other two left. And you
- 2 looked at Jeb, you saw the head shot with -- or did
- 3 you see -- and did you see shots in a particular spot
- 4 or did you just see the blood?
- 5 THE WITNESS: I just saw the blood.
- 6 A GRAND JUROR: So the brain splatter you
- 7 did see a head shot of some kind?
- 8 THE WITNESS: Yes.
- 9 A GRAND JUROR: And you didn't see any
- 10 other --
- 11 THE WITNESS: No.
- 12 A GRAND JUROR: -- shots?
- 13 THE WITNESS: No. To do that, I would have
- 14 had to like climb onto -- I didn't want to disturb --
- 15 A GRAND JUROR: Got it.
- 16 THE WITNESS: There was no investigative
- 17 value for me at that point to climb onto the bed.
- 18 From what appeared to be brain matter on the wall, it
- 19 appeared to be head shots and there's no -- no medical
- 20 I could give to him and I didn't -- at this point,
- 21 it's a crime scene and I didn't want to disturb
- 22 anything else for my morbid curiosity.
- 23 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 24 Q And he still had the knife in his hand,
- 25 right?

1	A	Still	had	the	knife	in	his	hand	until	

- 2 Sergeant Mooney removed it. So since I never went
- onto the bed, I never got like a up close and personal
- 4 view.
- 5 A GRAND JUROR: And you heard the gunshot
- 6 before you saw her move off the bed?
- 7 THE WITNESS: Yes.
- 8 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 9 Q Okay. And I know it's difficult to really
- 10 put this into words, but how fast are these things
- 11 happening? I mean, as you describe it for us, it
- 12 seems like a pretty clear kind of sequence of events,
- 13 right? But, I mean, how fast is this happening?
- 14 A It's extremely fast. It's even hard to put
- into words, 'cause at that point, you're just relying
- on your training. So I've been a police officer now
- for nine years.
- 18 I've been involved in critical incidences
- 19 before and I've been on special units. I've served
- 20 dynamic search warrants where we've kicked in doors
- and done search warrants on houses. But there was no
- 22 slow down.
- 23 From the second that call got dispatched to
- the second I pulled up was -- running lights and
- 25 sirens, pulling up, seeing somebody critically injured

- and then making entry to a house. From the second I
- 2 pulled up to the second those shots were fired is --
- 3 got to be between one and two minutes.
- 4 And it -- it -- there was no slow down. I
- 5 mean, it was just so dynamic and happening so, so very
- fast that all we could do was just go based on the
- 7 training we have and use the tools that we were given
- 8 and, you know, to the best of our ability, try to help
- 9 these people. And from the second we opened that
- door, there was no indication from the person holding
- 11 the knife that there was any intent on giving up.
- 12 Even after force was applied by me using a
- 13 40-millimeter, nothing changed. So I don't know what
- it feels to be shot by that, but I know it has to
- 15 hurt. And it didn't change anything about his
- 16 behavior or demeanor.
- I like to think it bought us time, but it
- 18 didn't change what he was actively doing to the
- 19 female, which was trying to kill her.
- 20 MR. JACKSON: Okay. Any other questions?
- Okay. Thank you much -- thank you very
- 22 much.
- THE WITNESS: You're very welcome.
- 24 MR. JACKSON: All right. Why don't we take
- 25 just a few minute break here. So why don't we go off

- 1 the record.
- 2 (Recess taken, 4:12 p.m. 4:16 p.m.)
- 3 MR. JACKSON: Okay. We're back on the
- 4 record following our afternoon break. We'll go with
- 5 our next witness.
- 6 Stand here and raise your right hand.
- 7 ANDREW YOUNG
- 8 Was thereupon called as a witness; and, having been
- 9 first duly sworn, was examined and testified as follows:
- 10 BY MR. JACKSON:
- 11 Q Okay. You can have a seat.
- 12 Could you please state and spell your name.
- 13 A Andrew Young, A-n-d-r-e-w, Y-o-u-n-g.
- Q Where do you work?
- 15 A Portland Police Bureau.
- 16 Q What do you do for the Bureau?
- 17 A I'm a police officer.
- 18 Q How long have you been a police officer?
- 19 A Since May 25th of 2017.
- 20 Q Okay. And did you have any law enforcement
- 21 experience before that?
- 22 A No.
- 23 Q All right. And what precinct are you
- 24 assigned to?
- 25 A East Precinct.

- 1 Q And what shift?
- 2 A Night shift, E shift.
- 3 Q Okay. And what are the hours of night
- 4 shift?
- 5 A 10:00 p.m. to 8:00 a.m.
- 6 Q Were you working on April 28th into the
- 7 morning of April 29th, 2019?
- 8 A Yes.
- 9 Q As a patrol officer?
- 10 A Yes.
- 11 Q Do you remember what your district
- 12 assignment was?
- 13 A I was in 970s.
- 14 Q Okay.
- 15 A So 977 if I remember correctly.
- 16 Q Okay. Or 978 --
- 17 A 978.
- 18 Q -- is that right?
- 19 A Yeah --
- 20 Q Okay.
- 21 A -- that could've been it.
- 22 Q And what is your -- what does that mean?
- What -- what are you assigned to when you're the
- 24 978 car?
- 25 A It's an area of -- sorry. I get moved

- 1 around an awful lot as far as districts, so keeping
- track of exact boundaries is kind of -- so it's, like
- 3 -- I believe it's about Division to Holgate and 70s
- 4 goes from 8 to -- out to, I believe, 136th.
- 5 Q Okay. And so you would be responsible for
- 6 responding to any calls for service within that
- 7 geographical area?
- 8 A Correct.
- 9 Q Okay. Do you remember where you were when a
- 10 call came out, a stabbing call, for this address,
- 11
- 12 A I do.
- Q Where were you?
- 14 A I was on -- sitting in a parking lot to the
- south of Powell just west of 136.
- 16 Q Okay. And is that address actually in your
- 17 patrol district?
- 18 A Yes.
- 19 Q Okay. Was it your understanding that you
- 20 would be responding and that other officers would also
- 21 be responding or were you thinking you were responding
- 22 by yourself?
- 23 A Myself and others.
- 24 Q Okay. What did you do when you first got
- 25 the call?

- 1 A I first got the call. I had to figure out
- 2 exactly where it was in relation to where I was, which
- 3 was not very far. I heard them start dispatching,
- 4 giving -- giving us information about what was going
- on. And Officer Rizzo was dispatched along with me
- 6 and he started asking right away for resources.
- 7 Q What does that mean, asking for resources?
- 8 A Officers with -- with different trained
- 9 skill sets. You know, we had a -- he asked for a
- 10 rifle operator --
- O Mm-hmm.
- 12 A -- for a canine officer.
- O Mm-hmm.
- 14 A And then I made sure I knew Officer Rizzo is
- 15 a less-lethal operator, so I made sure that he was
- going to be operating in that capacity.
- 17 O Okay. And so all officers are not trained
- 18 necessarily to use those different weapon systems
- 19 you described?
- 20 A No.
- 21 Q Okay. And -- but all officers are trained
- 22 to utilize a handgun, right?
- 23 A Absolutely.
- Q Okay. So as these requests for additional
- resources are going out, it's to bring in those

- 1 officers with specialized training?
- 2 A Correct.
- 3 Q Okay. And then being that this address was
- 4 in your patrol district, was it your call?
- 5 A Yes.
- 6 Q Okay. And so what did you do? What -- what
- 7 does that mean for it to be your call?
- 8 A So I'm dispatched as the primary officer, so
- 9 I'm responsible for getting people set up; getting --
- 10 making sure that we are getting the right resources
- 11 that we need for the call.
- 12 And I also picked a staging area, which
- means that -- one specific area for all officers who
- are coming to respond to so that -- especially when we
- 15 have somebody that has a weapon, that we can move in
- 16 together and safely. So I picked a -- a staging area
- 17 to start.
- 18 Q And do you remember where that was?
- 19 A It was on 132 just south of Powell.
- 20 Q Okay. As you are responding to the scene,
- 21 did that change --
- 22 A Yes.
- 23 Q -- or the situation change? What changed
- 24 it?
- 25 A Officer Gonzalez went closer to the scene to

- get eyes on so that he could see what was going on
- 2 because we were still getting calls in giving us more
- 3 information. But those calls have to go through a
- 4 call taker and they have to go through a dispatcher
- 5 and it takes -- there's a time delay.
- 6 So getting an officer with eyes on the
- 7 scene, it helps us get information quicker because
- 8 then it's just one step onto the radio and we know
- 9 what's going on.
- 10 So we were getting -- still getting more
- information from the dispatcher, multiple people
- 12 calling in saying there were multiple victims and that
- this was still an active situation, as well as
- Officer Gonzalez showed up and he could see that there
- 15 were -- and he was getting more information that there
- were multiple victims and that the person was still
- 17 inside the house.
- 18 Q Okay. And so was he putting that
- 19 information out over the radio? Is that how you
- 20 were --
- 21 A Yes.
- 22 0 -- hearing it?
- 23 A Yes.
- 24 Q And why was it that that information changed
- 25 your initial plan, which was stage off -- south of

- 1 Powell, move in -- move in together?
- 2 A Because, for one, if he was in the house, if
- 3 everybody had vacated the house and he was in the
- 4 house alone, then there's nobody else that's in
- 5 danger -- immediate danger, I should say. The other
- 6 option that happens a lot is a suspect will find out
- 7 that 9-1-1's been called and they'll leave the area.
- 8 They'll try to take off.
- 9 So if we can get people together, at -- at
- 10 that point, we don't know where the threat is if
- 11 they've -- if they've left or if we do know where the
- 12 threat is and they -- it's in the house, then we can
- move together and make it more safe for us as well as
- 14 responding, at the same time, being able to take care
- of victims and address the threat at the same time.
- 16 Q But when Officer Gonzalez is putting out,
- 17 "Hey, this is still -- this is an active situation.
- 18 The guy's still here. People are still in jeopardy,"
- 19 how does that change the approach plan?
- 20 A So it changes the situation because then it
- 21 basically moves us towards what our response would be
- 22 like if it was more like an active shooter situation.
- 23 So people are still in threat -- in threat of danger.
- 24 We've got potentially more victims and the
- 25 more time that we wait, the potential for more people

- to be injured and/or killed goes up. So we knew that
- 2 we had to respond a -- a lot more quickly.
- 3 Q Okay. And so was a decision made to just go
- 4 straight to the house and not stage --
- 5 A Correct.
- 6 Q -- away?
- 7 A Yes.
- 8 Q Okay. When you got there, who was on scene?
- 9 A So I -- Officer Gonzalez was there and I
- 10 arrived directly behind Officer Rizzo.
- 11 Q Okay. And do you remember where you guys
- 12 parked?
- 13 A On Street just west of 132.
- 14 O Okay. Walked up on foot?
- 15 A Yes.
- 16 Q What did you see?
- 17 A So the -- you can see the house here. I
- 18 could see the driveway and I was coming from the east
- 19 looking towards the west, so I saw the driveway. And
- 20 then outside of the driveway was Officer Rizzo and
- 21 then Officer Gonzalez.
- 22 In the eastern -- east-most part of the
- 23 driveway on the sidewalk was one of the victims
- 24 sitting there asking for help, bleed -- excuse me --
- 25 bleeding profusely from his neck and coughing, so it

1	seemed	like	he	was	also	coughing	uр	some	blood.	And	Ι
_	~ ~ ~ ~			0. ~	O O	000.	0-1-	~ ~ ~			_

- 2 could see the blood pooling around him and starting to
- 3 run into the street.
- 4 There was also an elderly lady that was
- 5 outside amidst the cars in the front driveway and
- 6 they -- right after we arrived, somebody got out of
- 7 the RV that was sitting in the driveway as well. So
- 8 we were trying to get them to move away from the house
- 9 toward -- toward safety.
- 10 Q And where was safety? Where were you trying
- 11 to get them to move to?
- 12 A We were trying to get them to move over to
- where other officers were going to be responding
- 14 quickly.
- 15 Q Okay. Did you guys stop and render aid or
- 16 address these things or were your attention -- or was
- 17 your attention elsewhere?
- 18 A Our attention was on the threat since it was
- 19 still an active threat. If we stop and render aid --
- 20 again, we know more resources are coming. We know
- 21 that medical has been called and they're on their way.
- 22 And if we don't address the threat, that
- 23 increases the likelihood that this -- this suspect
- 24 could either hurt somebody else inside the house or
- 25 come out and -- and try to attack those of us that are

- 1 there trying to help. So we needed to address the
- 2 threat first and foremost.
- 3 Q How did you guys go about doing that?
- 4 A We decided that we were going to enter the
- 5 house and go through and clear the house.
- 6 Q And you've described yourself, Officer Rizzo
- 7 and Officer Gonzalez there.
- 8 A Mm-hmm.
- 9 Q As you're coming up to the house, were other
- officers coming into the area or on scene or was it
- 11 still just the three of you?
- 12 A So we were the first three to enter the
- house and other people were -- were coming up. I
- 14 could hear -- I could hear sirens, but my -- my focus
- 15 was on the house. So I couldn't -- I couldn't tell
- 16 you who else had arrived at that time.
- 17 Q Okay. When you went into the house, crossed
- 18 the threshold, what did you see?
- 19 A There was the -- the elderly lady that had
- 20 been outside had made her way back into the house.
- 21 Against our urging for her to get to safety, she
- 22 had gone back into the house.
- 23 And on the right -- right-hand side when we
- 24 entered -- so there's a -- a living area with a couple
- of couches. And to the right-hand side was an elderly

- 1 gentleman who was sitting down holding his face saying
- 2 he was hurting.
- 3 He appeared to be -- have his face bruised.
- 4 He was bleeding from somewhere. I don't recall
- 5 exactly where. And he was sitting there. Other than
- 6 that, there was blood all over the floor.
- 7 It -- I could tell that, you know, the --
- 8 whatever had happened had started in there, basically,
- 9 'cause there was blood all over the floor and -- and
- 10 on things.
- 11 Q Okay. And let's see. So you guys get
- there. It's about 4:20 in the morning. Does that
- 13 sound right to you?
- 14 A Yes.
- 15 O Okay. Still dark outside?
- 16 A Mm-hmm.
- 17 Q How were you able to see once you came into
- 18 the house? Were the lights on?
- 19 A Lights were on.
- 20 Q Did you have flashlights?
- 21 A Lights were on.
- 22 Q Lights were on.
- 23 A Yeah.
- 24 Q Okay. Talking overhead lights like we have
- in this room or was it, like, lamps or was it, like,

- 1 dim, very bright?
- 2 A It --
- 3 Q Do you remember?
- 4 A I mean, it wasn't terribly bright, but it
- 5 was bright enough to see. I -- as far as what kind of
- 6 lighting, I'm -- I'm not sure.
- 7 Q Okay. So you move into the house. What
- 8 happened then?
- 9 A So we decided that Officer Rizzo, since he
- was a less-lethal operator, he was going to act in
- 11 that capacity. And Officer Gonzalez and I were lethal
- 12 cover, so we had our handguns out. We moved into the
- house over to -- we made our way through the living
- 14 area.
- 15 And we came to where -- to the left, it
- turns in -- there's a small hallway area back to
- 17 bedrooms. And to the -- to the right -- well,
- 18 straight ahead, there was an open back door. And to
- 19 the right, it went to -- into the kitchen.
- 20 But we couldn't see right around that
- 21 corner, so it had been Officer Gonzalez and
- 22 Officer Rizzo in front. But at that time, since we
- 23 didn't know what was beyond both corners, we had to
- 24 switch it up. So Officer Rizzo moved behind me and
- Officer Gonzalez and I moved up at the same time.

Officer Gonzalez was -- was going to take 1 2 and hold the -- the hallway, so that he could see any threats coming that way. And I was going to address 3 4 the open back door as well as the -- what was around the corner in the kitchen. 5 6 0 Okay. Did you look down into the kitchen? 7 Α Yes. And what did you see? 8 There was another door that was cracked 9 open, so -- and I -- but I couldn't see beyond that. 10 11 When you say, "cracked," I mean, was 0 it literally cracked or was it open a number of 12 13 inches or --I -- if I recall, maybe a couple inches. 14 15 Okay. Any people or sounds coming from down 0 16 in there? 17 Α No. 18 0 Okay. So what did you do then? 19 So that was -- that became my 20 responsibility, as I didn't know if there was anybody 21 in the back or anybody through that door. I didn't 22 know what was beyond the door. 23 So that was my area of responsibility, was 24 just making sure that nobody came through the back

that was either going to be a threat or try to be

25

- involved; nobody came through the other door that was
- 2 either going to be a threat or try to be involved.
- 3 At the same time, I also had that front room
- 4 that I just still needed to make sure that the -- the
- folks that were in the front room didn't try to come
- 6 back to where everyone else was.
- 7 Q Okay. I think you described there was the
- 8 elderly gentleman who appeared injured sitting on the
- 9 couch right by the door --
- 10 A Mm-hmm.
- 11 Q -- and then the elderly lady --
- 12 A Mm-hmm.
- 13 Q -- who had come in.
- 14 A Yeah.
- 15 Q And was she standing, sitting?
- 16 A At first, she was standing, trying to make
- 17 her way, basically, over into the kitchen area. And I
- 18 had to -- I had to get her to leave and go back in --
- 19 at least into the living room. And she ended up going
- 20 in there and, I think, sitting -- sitting down if I
- 21 remember correctly.
- Q Okay. In that living area?
- A Mm-hmm.
- 24 Q Okay. So you're holding the kitchen and
- 25 then the door there plus the open back door?

- 1 A Correct.
- 2 Q What happened then?
- 3 A I could hear -- so the information that we
- 4 got was that -- from the people on scene was that the
- 5 suspect was in a room with a baby.
- 6 O Mm-hmm.
- 7 A I didn't hear -- if -- if anybody else
- 8 heard, I don't know. But I didn't hear at the time
- 9 that there was also a female in the room. And I heard
- 10 a female scream. It was a very bloodcurdling scream
- and I could hear it coming from those rooms behind us
- down the hall like I described.
- 13 O Okay. And was Officer Gonzalez and
- 14 Officer Rizzo still -- and there's a line diagram here
- 15 if that would help. But were they still kind of in
- this area holding the hall or had they proceeded down
- the hall toward the rooms at that point?
- 18 A So once we were established at -- at that --
- 19 the -- where we could see both directions, they said
- 20 that they were going to go start clearing rooms. So
- 21 they started moving down and clearing different rooms
- that were down that way.
- 23 Q And you stayed over here in this area?
- 24 A I was -- I was right about in -- in here,
- so I -- I was backed up to the -- right up to

- 1 the hallway --
- 2 Q Okay.
- 3 A -- pretty much.
- 4 Q So from that point, you could see, if you
- 5 turned around, down the hall, but also the front room,
- 6 back door and into the kitchen?
- 7 A Correct.
- 8 Q Okay. Were they down the hall when you
- 9 heard that scream?
- 10 A I think the first time I heard the scream
- 11 was -- was when we were getting established there,
- 12 so --
- 0 Still in this area --
- 14 A Correct.
- 15 Q -- here? Okay. And then you said the first
- 16 time, so did you hear another scream?
- 17 A Yeah, I -- I heard a few screams. I don't
- 18 know exactly what the timing was as far as when it --
- 19 when they happened. I know the first scream was
- 20 basically when we were -- like I said, when we were
- 21 getting established in there.
- 22 Other screams came. I don't know if they
- 23 were -- you know, at what time frame they were in them
- 24 clearing the different rooms and whatnot.
- Q Okay. Could you tell, female, male voice?

- 1 A Female.
- 2 Q Female voice? Okay. Was it words or
- 3 just noise?
- 4 A I remember a bloodcurdling scream. I think
- I remember hearing, "Help." But other than that, I
- 6 couldn't tell you.
- 7 Q Okay. Was there any other loud noises
- 8 happening? I mean, if you could describe for us
- 9 what -- what the house was like while you were
- 10 standing there.
- 11 A Well, the -- the older gentleman continued
- to ask for help. I could tell he wasn't in as bad of
- 13 condition as the person who was outside. I knew that
- 14 he could wait. So, basically, other than making sure
- that he stayed where he was, I wasn't terribly
- 16 concerned about him.
- 17 But he did continue to ask for help the
- 18 entire time we were in there. The elderly woman
- 19 seemed confused and was almost kind of asking what was
- 20 going on, so there was that --
- 21 Q Did -- did she appear injured?
- 22 A No.
- 23 Q Okay.
- 24 A Hm-mm, she did not. And then I could hear
- 25 from behind me the -- Officer Rizzo and Officer

- 1 Gonzalez going through the rooms and saying that they
- 2 were clear.
- 3 Q Okay. At any point, do you remember seeing
- 4 Sergeant James Mooney in the house or on scene?
- 5 A I do remember -- I don't remember exactly
- 6 when he came in. I remember him coming past me at --
- 7 at some point. And he and Officer Burns also came --
- 8 came in. And they both came past me at some point.
- 9 At what point in time, I -- I can't tell you exactly
- 'cause I was really focused on what I said, the -- the
- 11 area of responsibility that I had.
- But I know -- I do know when I -- I -- if
- memory serves right, I think they -- they showed up
- 14 at -- at about the time that they started trying to
- 15 push the bedroom door open that had the suspect, the
- 16 female and the baby in it.
- 17 Q Okay. So you hear this scream, they're down
- 18 there. Did you end up going down the hall or did you
- 19 stay out in that --
- 20 A I stayed.
- Q Okay. What do you remember happening then?
- 22 A So I -- I -- I remember hearing them trying
- to force the door open.
- 24 Q Could you actually see the door from where
- 25 you were?

- 1 A I could see the door. I couldn't see into
- 2 it other than a small crack. I never actually had
- 3 eyes on the suspect.
- 4 O Mm-hmm.
- 5 A But I could see a little bit into the door.
- 6 Q Okay. And what happened then?
- 7 A So they were forced -- they had to force the
- 8 door open and they were trying to get into the door
- 9 the best they could. Continued to hear the female
- 10 scream. I heard somebody say, "Get the baby," and
- Officer Gonzalez, I believe, was the one that grabbed
- the baby, ran him out into the living area, set him
- down on a couch and ran back to where he had been.
- I could hear Officer Mooney trying to talk
- 15 to the suspect. He stayed very calm the whole time.
- 16 That really sticks in my brain how -- how calm he was,
- 17 trying to tell the suspect, "Just put the knife down.
- 18 You don't have to do this. We can talk about this.
- 19 You don't have to do this. We can talk about this."
- The female continued to scream. I remember
- 21 hearing the suspect yell at one point something to the
- 22 effect of, "You're just going to have to kill me,"
- and, "Just kill me."
- 24 Officer Rizzo, I heard him discharge his
- less lethal. And then I heard him step out -- step

- 1 away and say he was reloading it. Still,
- 2 Officer Mooney continued to talk very calmly to the
- 3 suspect trying to deescalate the situation, trying to
- 4 get him to give him a chance to give up, basically.
- 5 Officer Rizzo, again, got in and discharged
- 6 his -- his less lethal in an attempt to get the
- 7 suspect to give up. He stepped out again; and, again,
- 8 nothing but calm try -- attempt -- attempts at
- 9 deescalation from Sergeant Mooney. And the next thing
- 10 I remember hearing is two gunshots.
- 11 Q Okay. Could you see from where you were
- them actually get the door open? You described
- earlier that they had the door open --
- 14 A They --
- 16 A They -- they never had it open all the way.
- 17 They were the officers -- so Officer Rizzo, Officer
- 18 Gonzalez, Sergeant Mooney, when they were in the room,
- from what I saw -- 'cause I -- I glanced back a couple
- 20 of times.
- 21 From what I saw, they basically had to lean
- 22 in through -- to get beyond the threshold. They never
- were able to get the door completely wide open from
- 24 what I saw.
- Q Okay. And did you become aware at some

- 1 point that they had actually entered the room and were
- 2 inside of it?
- 3 A Like, fully?
- 4 Q Yeah.
- 5 A No.
- 6 Q Not that you saw?
- 7 A Not that I -- not that I saw. Not that I --
- 8 Q Okay. And your attention was focused, as
- 9 you said --
- 10 A Correct.
- 11 Q -- more back toward the front door, the back
- door and the kitchen area?
- 13 A Correct.
- Q Okay. Once you heard the two shots, what
- 15 went through your mind?
- 16 A Well, I knew what had happened. I -- like I
- 17 said, I never saw the suspect. So -- but I knew that
- 18 he had a knife, but you never know what else is in a
- 19 room. So one of my thoughts was instantly making sure
- that all of the officers were safe.
- I could hear the female scream still, so I
- assumed that she hadn't been hit. And I heard
- somebody say that the suspect still had the knife in
- 24 his hand, so I knew that there was possibly still a
- 25 threat there.

- I don't recall ever hearing the suspect
- 2 after the gunshots. And I know that I heard them say
- 3 that the suspect was down, but I didn't know to
- 4 what -- to what capacity.
- 5 O Mm-hmm. Or to what extent?
- 6 A To what extent, right.
- 8 making sure that all the officers were okay. Were you
- 9 able to confirm that?
- 10 A I looked back and -- and everybody --
- 11 everybody was still standing there. Nobody seemed
- 12 like they had been hurt or -- in any way.
- 13 Q Okay. All right. You said you heard the
- 14 female scream both before and after --
- A Mm-hmm.
- 16 Q -- the shots.
- 17 A Yes.
- 18 Q I mean, was that kind of continuous or
- ongoing screaming on her part or --
- 20 A It -- it was --
- 22 A -- pretty much. I mean, there'd be little
- 23 breaks I -- in the screaming, but --
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 25 A -- it was -- it was pretty continuous from

- 1 what I recall.
- 2 Q And what about him? Was he also yelling
- 3 throughout or --
- 4 A I just -- I just remember hearing him here
- 5 and there. And everything that he yelled was -- was
- 6 very on the side of, "You're going to have to kill
- 7 me, basically.
- 8 Q Okay. Once you heard the shots and then,
- 9 you know, you glanced back, verified --
- 10 A Yeah.
- 11 Q -- everybody's okay, did people start coming
- 12 back out of the hallway or out of the room?
- 13 A I -- I looked back. I did see through --
- what I could see of the door, I saw the female had
- 15 gotten up and they were directing her out of the room.
- 16 So I went and helped her get out of the room -- excuse
- 17 me -- walked her over to the living area.
- 18 She was very frantic. I could see there was
- 19 blood on her hands and she asked for something that
- 20 she could wipe her hands with so she could hold
- 21 her baby.
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 23 A So I found -- I went into the kitchen and I
- 24 found some paper towels so that she could wipe her
- 25 hands so she could go and hold her baby.

- 1 Q Mm-hmm. Did she do that?
- 2 A Yes.
- 3 Q Okay. Do you recall seeing how she
- 4 was clothed?
- 5 A I don't recall. I know she had a shirt
- 6 and -- I don't recall other than that --
- 7 Q Okay.
- 8 A -- no.
- 9 Q What about the officers? Did they start
- 10 coming back down the hallway?
- 11 A Not right away. Sergeant Searle showed up
- on scene and walked in and grabbed Officer Gonzalez
- and then looked at me and said, "Take him outside.
- 14 Put him in the car."
- 15 Q Okay. Did you do that?
- 16 A Yes.
- 17 Q And did you understand why you were being
- 18 asked to do that?
- 19 A Yes. Because I -- I assumed at that point
- that he was one of the officers who had shot.
- Q Okay. And that's standard procedure --
- 22 A Correct.
- Q -- following a shooting?
- 24 A Yes.
- Q Once you put him in the car, did you stay

Examination of Andrew Young

- with him or did you assign another officer to stay
- 2 with him?
- 3 A I -- I stayed with him until the -- the
- 4 scene had calmed enough that another officer took
- 5 over.
- 6 Q Okay. And were you also identified as
- 7 a witness --
- 8 A Yeah.
- 9 Q -- officer?
- 10 A Correct.
- 11 Q So were you separated off and held in a
- 12 patrol car as well?
- 13 A Yes.
- Q Okay. When you described Officer Gonzalez
- bringing the baby out -- well, actually, first, you
- said you heard somebody say, "There's a baby," or,
- "Get the baby," or something --
- 18 A Yeah.
- 19 Q -- like that, right?
- 20 A Yeah.
- 21 Q Could you hear, like, a baby crying or
- anything like that?
- 23 A I recall hearing a baby crying at some point
- 24 before the baby was taken out, but the -- the timing
- of the -- the cry, I -- I'm not entirely positive when

Examination of Andrew Young

- 1 that happened.
- 2 Q And when Officer Gonzalez appeared with the
- 3 baby and set her down on the couch, how did the baby
- 4 appear?
- 5 A From what I -- I just -- at a quick glance,
- 6 looked -- the baby appeared unharmed.
- 7 Q Uninjured?
- 8 A Correct.
- 9 Q Okay. Was she crying?
- 10 A I would imagine. I can't -- I was more
- 11 focused on everything else that was going on.
- 12 MR. JACKSON: Okay. Yeah. Okay. Those are
- the questions I have. Do the grand jurors have any
- 14 questions?
- 15 A GRAND JUROR: You say you heard two
- 16 gunshots?
- 17 THE WITNESS: Yes.
- 18 A GRAND JUROR: Was there much of any length
- of time between them?
- THE WITNESS: They were very quick.
- 21 A GRAND JUROR: I'm sorry?
- THE WITNESS: They were very quick.
- A GRAND JUROR: Okay.
- 24 THE WITNESS: Like, one -- one right
- 25 after --

1	A GRAND JUROR: Almost simultaneous?
2	THE WITNESS: Very close, yeah.
3	MR. JACKSON: Any other questions?
4	I don't see any.
5	Okay. Thank you very much, Officer.
6	A GRAND JUROR: Thank you.
7	THE WITNESS: Thank you.
8	MR. JACKSON: Oh, okay.
9	All right. Stand right here and raise your
10	right hand.
11	SARAH BURNS
12	Was thereupon called as a witness; and, having been
13	first duly sworn, was examined and testified as follows:
14	EXAMINATION
14 15	EXAMINATION BY MR. JACKSON:
15	BY MR. JACKSON:
15 16	BY MR. JACKSON: Q Okay. You can have a seat.
15 16 17	BY MR. JACKSON: Q Okay. You can have a seat. Could you please state and spell your name.
15 16 17 18	BY MR. JACKSON: Q Okay. You can have a seat. Could you please state and spell your name. A My name is Sarah Burns, S-a-r-a-h,
15 16 17 18	BY MR. JACKSON: Q Okay. You can have a seat. Could you please state and spell your name. A My name is Sarah Burns, S-a-r-a-h, B-u-r-n-s.
15 16 17 18 19 20	BY MR. JACKSON: Q Okay. You can have a seat. Could you please state and spell your name. A My name is Sarah Burns, S-a-r-a-h, B-u-r-n-s. Q And where are you working?
15 16 17 18 19 20 21	DY MR. JACKSON: Q Okay. You can have a seat. Could you please state and spell your name. A My name is Sarah Burns, S-a-r-a-h, B-u-r-n-s. Q And where are you working? A I am working for the Portland Police Bureau

A I've been a police officer for 19 months.

25

1 And do you have any law enforcement 2 experience before working for the Portland Police 3 Bureau? I do not. 4 Α 5 Okay. What is your -- or what was your 6 assignment on April 29th of 2019? 7 I was working 947, which is from 102 to 8 162nd Avenue from I-84 to north of Burnside. 9 And is that a district in the East Precinct? 10 That is a district in the East Precinct. Α 11 And what hours were you working? 0 12 I was working from 22:00 to 08:00 a.m. Α Okay. Were you working in full uniform, 13 0 badge displayed? 14 15 Α I was. And in a marked patrol car? 16 Q 17 Α I was. What kind of -- was it a --18 0 19 It's an FIU, so, like, the Ford Α 20 Interceptors. 21 0 SUV? 22 Α Yes. 23 Q Okay. By yourself or with a partner? 24 Α I was by myself. 25 0 Okay. Do you remember a call coming out for

1			
2		A	I do.
3	(Q	And a stabbing had occurred there?
4	_	A	I do.
5	•	Q	Do you remember where you were when that
6	call	came	out?
7		A	I was right around the Gateway so,
8	like,	102	and Halsey.
9		Q	And is that address in your patrol district?
10		A	It is not.
11		Q	Why did you decide to respond?
12		A	Dispatch was coming out with multiple
13	updat	es th	nat there were multiple victims, multiple
14	calle	rs.	And and the suspect was still in the
15	area,	so I	I attached to come assist the primary
16	offic	er.	
17	•	Q	Okay. To assist?
18		A	Yeah.
19	•	Q	Yeah. And you said you were out in the
20	Gatew	ay ar	rea?
21		A	Yes.
22		Q	So how long do you think it took you to
23	actua	lly s	get to the location?
24		A	Probably took me four or five minutes to
25	get ti	here.	

1	Q		Okay	. Ar	nd while	you're	driving	were	updates
2	coming	in	over	the	radio?				

- 3 A They were.
- 4 Q What were they?
- 5 A Updates were that somebody had been stabbed
- in the throat; that somebody had been hit in the head
- 7 with a hammer. These are just the updates that I
- 8 remember. Just, again, that there were multiple
- 9 victims and that the suspect was possibly still
- 10 inside.
- 11 Q Okay. So what's going through your mind as
- 12 you're hearing these updates while you're driving to
- 13 the scene?
- 14 A Just that we have a very serious incident
- 15 going on and -- and we need to get there and -- and,
- 16 you know, help get these victims out and figure out
- 17 what is going on.
- 18 Q Okay. When you got to the location, what
- 19 did you see?
- 20 A When I got there and I parked, I was walking
- 21 up to the house and I encountered the first victim,
- 22 which was the man who was stabbed in the throat. He
- was on his knees kind of on the sidewalk near the
- 24 driveway just holding his throat and -- and saying
- 25 he's going to die.

1	I walked past him, kind of followed the
2	blood trail into the driveway and in between two cars,
3	I found a a second victim who was bleeding from his
4	head and and bleeding from his leg. And I just
5	told him to get out to the street, you know, to try to
6	get him medical attention sooner.
7	And then I entered the living room of the
8	house and
9	Q Okay. Let me ask you another question here.
10	So when you got there, was it your understanding there
11	were already other officers on scene?
12	A Yes. So while en route there,
13	Officer Gonzalez, I heard him, over the radio, say
14	that he could hear an active disturbance inside the
15	house and that he was going to enter.
16	And Sergeant Mooney said, "Wait for one
17	more," so I knew that at least two people would be
18	two officers would be in the house prior to me
19	going in.
20	Q Okay. And did you park, like, right at the
21	residence or did you park back a ways and walk up?
22	A No. I parked north of Street on
23	
24	Q Okay. And walked in?
25	A Yes.

- 1 Q Could you see other patrol cars parked in
- 2 the area?
- 3 A Yes.
- 4 Q Okay. With lights on or just parked?
- 5 A No. I -- the one in front of me didn't have
- 6 lights on that -- that parked in front -- that
- 7 I parked behind.
- 8 Q As you walked up -- and we're looking now at
- 9 the aerial map. As you walked up into the driveway,
- 10 you said you passed an individual who was bleeding
- 11 here. Did you see other officers out in the front of
- 12 the house?
- 13 A No.
- 14 Q You were just by yourself?
- 15 A Yes.
- 16 Q What did you think had happened at that
- 17 point?
- 18 A I knew that they had gone inside.
- 19 Q So you already knew they --
- 20 A Yeah --
- 21 O -- were inside?
- 22 A -- I knew that they had gone inside.
- Q Okay. You saw this second person in the
- 24 driveway. Do you remember where he appeared to
- 25 be injured?

- 1 A He was holding his head and I could see that
- there was blood kind of on his face and then in his
- 3 leg, I believe.
- 4 Q Okay. Upper leg, lower leg? Do you
- 5 remember?
- 6 A No, I can't be for certain.
- 7 Q Okay. Was he standing or was he on
- 8 the ground?
- 9 A He was standing and I think he might have
- gone to his knees, too; but I just tried to tell him
- 11 to get out to the street.
- 12 Q Okay. Was it your understanding that
- 13 medical was responding --
- 14 A Yes.
- 15 O -- as well?
- 16 A Yes.
- 17 Q Okay. So then you said you came up to the
- 18 front door. What did you see when you came in?
- 19 A When you go in the living room, there's two
- 20 couches. And on the couch that I'll say is on the
- left was an elderly woman and on the couch on the
- 22 right was a -- a third victim who was holding his leg
- and he was bleeding from his leg.
- Q Okay. Seated?
- 25 A Yes.

- 1 Q Okay. And we have a line diagram here of
- the house. Come in the front door, the couches you
- were describing. And so which one was the elderly
- 4 lady sitting on and which one was the other --
- 5 A She was sitting here and he was sitting
- 6 here.
- 7 Q Okay. All right. He appeared to be holding
- 8 his leg or bleeding from his leg?
- 9 A Yes.
- 10 Q Okay. Did you stop or did you move
- 11 past him?
- 12 A I tried to tell him to go outside as well.
- Okay. Did they seem to do that?
- 14 A He -- not that I recall. He didn't really
- 15 respond to me.
- 16 Q What about the elderly lady?
- 17 A I was asking her where the suspect was at
- 18 and I didn't really get much of a response from her
- 19 either. I tried to tell her to go outside and she
- 20 asked to get her shoes and I said, "No, you can't do
- 21 that." And then I proceeded down the hallway.
- 22 Q Okay. Did you see Officer Young in the
- house?
- 24 A I did. When I went down the hallway is when
- 25 I first saw him.

- 1 Q Okay. Were there any other people in the
- 2 house that you saw before you went down the hallway?
- 3 A No.
- 4 Q Okay. Police or otherwise?
- 5 A No.
- 6 Q Okay. So you get into that hallway. Why
- 7 did you go down there?
- 8 A I could hear officers down there.
- 9 Okay. What were they doing?
- 10 A They were standing outside this bedroom door
- and they were -- from my perception, they were
- 12 listening in to the door.
- 13 0 Was it closed?
- 14 A It was closed.
- 15 Q Okay. Do you know which officers it was
- 16 that were up there?
- 17 A It was Officer Gonzalez, Officer Rizzo,
- 18 Sergeant Mooney and Officer Young.
- 19 O Okay. And if you could describe kind of
- 20 what the spacing is like in that hallway and down at
- 21 the end of it.
- 22 A Down at the end of the hallway, there's
- 23 really no room. We were all kind of cramped in there
- 24 and it's kind of like a -- a -- almost like a T --
- Q Mm-hmm.

- 1 A -- really, but --
- 2 Q So hallway here, hallway here?
- 3 A Yeah.
- 4 Q And then the doors to the three rooms?
- 5 A Yeah. So it's --
- 6 Q Okay.
- 7 A -- kind of -- this kind of was where we
- 8 all ended up jammed up at. There's just not a lot
- 9 of room there.
- 10 O Okay. Could you see whether the door was
- open at all at that point or was it completely closed?
- 12 A It was completely closed.
- Q Okay. Could you hear anything going on
- 14 inside the room?
- 15 A No.
- Q What happened then?
- 17 A Officer Gonzalez pushed the door open and
- 18 the door -- he couldn't get the door much further than
- 19 probably six to eight inches. And I heard him say,
- "He's got a knife to her throat and there's a
- 21 baby inside."
- 22 Q Okay.
- 23 A Officer Gonzalez said that.
- Q What did you do?
- 25 A I just kept waiting. There's -- you know,

- we're trying to figure out what we're going to do.
- 2 Q Okay. Could you see into the room?
- 3 A I could not.
- 4 Q Did you start providing updates on the
- 5 radio --
- 6 A I did.
- 8 A I did.
- 9 Q Okay. What happened then?
- 10 A Officer Gonzalez reached in and was able to
- grab the baby through that -- that gap in the door and
- 12 pulled it out. And -- and I'm not sure where he took
- it. I -- but he came back pretty quickly.
- O Okay. And then what happened?
- 15 A And then -- I don't know who -- I don't
- 16 recall who forced the door, but they ended up being
- able to push the door open and push that kind of crib
- 18 that was blocking the door up out of the way so the
- 19 door could be opened. And then Officer Rizzo,
- 20 Sergeant Mooney and Officer Gonzalez entered the very
- 21 cramped doorway.
- 22 Q Okay. Did you, at any point, hear or see
- 23 whether there was a less-lethal operator up there?
- 24 A Yes, Officer Rizzo was utilizing his -- his
- 40 millimeter.

- 1 Q Okay. Were you aware of whether or not he
- 2 deployed it?
- 3 A He did deploy it.
- 4 0 You heard that?
- 5 A I heard and I -- I could see. My field of
- 6 view was from here in, so I could see him deploying
- 7 his less lethal. I couldn't see what he was hitting,
- 8 but I could see him firing it.
- 9 Q Okay. So was your back kind of against
- 10 this -- this other doorway here looking in this way?
- 11 A My back was kind of to this wall looking in
- 12 this way.
- Q Oh, okay. All right. And then Mooney,
- 14 Gonzalez and Rizzo were out --
- 15 A They're --
- 16 Q -- in front of you --
- 17 A They're -- yeah. And they're --
- 18 Q -- in the doorway?
- 19 A -- in the -- the door frame at this point.
- They're past the door frame.
- 21 Q Okay. Officer Rizzo deployed the less
- 22 lethal? Just one time or more than one time?
- A Twice.
- Q Two times --
- 25 A Correct.

- 1 Q -- you heard?
- 2 A Yes.
- 3 Q Okay. Did you hear anything going on inside
- 4 the room?
- 5 A Yes. I could hear a -- a man inside
- 6 screaming. He was saying, "I'm going to kill her.
- 7 I'm going to kill her. Shoot me. Kill me. I'm going
- 8 to kill her" --
- 9 Q Okay.
- 10 A -- repeatedly.
- 11 Q Could you hear a female voice?
- 12 A I could. I -- I couldn't tell you what I
- 13 could hear her saying, though. I just -- but I
- 14 recollect hearing a female voice.
- 15 Q Okay. And then what were the officers doing
- 16 at the doorway?
- 17 A They were giving him commands. Sergeant
- 18 Mooney gave him very calm commands to drop the knife.
- 19 I recall that very well. And I believe Officer Rizzo
- told him to drop the knife as well.
- 21 Q Okay. Ultimately, were they able to get the
- door open enough to go into the room?
- 23 A They did.
- Q Okay. What happened then?
- 25 A They -- well, so this is all with the door

- 1 already open.
- Q Oh, okay.
- 3 A So the door's open; and, you know, those
- 4 commands were given. Less lethal was deployed and,
- 5 you know, shortly thereafter -- I don't have a time
- frame -- I heard two shots.
- 7 Q Okay. Were you still in a position where
- 8 you couldn't actually see into the room?
- 9 A That's correct.
- 10 Q Okay. And what did you do once you heard
- 11 the shots? What were you thinking?
- 12 A Well, I was thinking we need to get the
- victim out and -- and kind of then go in and -- and
- figure out what we're going to do with him.
- 15 O Okay. And did you have a sense of who
- 16 had shot?
- 17 A I -- I knew that Gonzo had fired one --
- 18 Sergeant Gonzalez -- or excuse me -- Officer Gonzalez
- 19 had fired one round and Sergeant Mooney had fired
- one round.
- 21 Q How did you know that?
- 22 A I could see both of their bodies kind of
- change. Sergeant Mooney, I watched him lean in a
- little bit before he fired.
- Q Okay. So from where you were, you could

- 1 actually see those officers inside the room?
- 2 A I could see their backs --
- 3 Q Their backs.
- 4 A -- essentially.
- Okay. And so when they shot, you could see,
- 6 like, kind of recoil or movement?
- 7 A That's correct.
- 8 Q Okay. All right. When did you first see
- 9 the actual female that was in the room?
- 10 A When we were trying to get her out of the
- 11 room, try and reach in and -- I think she had to climb
- 12 over the -- the crib and there was a -- a bunch of
- 13 stuff in that room, so reached in and gave her a hand
- to pull her out of the room.
- 15 Q Okay. Could you see any part of the two
- people that were in the room prior to the shots being
- fired or even the less lethal being deployed?
- 18 A There were a couple moments where I could
- 19 see the very far end of the bed, like, this corner
- 20 over here --
- Q Mm-hmm.
- 22 A -- where I could see kind of legs -- two
- 23 sets of legs.
- 24 Q Mm-hmm. What do you remember about them?
- 25 A I -- I just remember legs laying flat,

- 1 almost kind of maybe intertwined.
- 2 Q Okay. Could you tell whether they were male
- 3 or female legs or clothed, not clothed?
- 4 A They were both clothed. I could just tell
- 5 they were two sets of -- separate sets of legs.
- 6 Q Okay. All right. Did you end up going into
- 7 the room --
- 8 A I --
- 9 Q -- at some point?
- 10 A I did go into the room.
- 11 O When was that?
- 12 A After we got her out, we -- I stepped into
- 13 the room. There was a little more room at this point.
- 14 The crib had been pushed out of the way.
- 15 And the suspect was laying on the bed and he
- still had the knife in his hand, in his right hand.
- 17 And so we were coming up with our plan to secure the
- 18 knife and -- and try and get him medical attention.
- 19 Q Okay. And what was the plan as you
- 20 understood it?
- 21 A We had discussed getting a shield, but for
- 22 time purposes, Sergeant Mooney kind of -- we still had
- lethal cover on him. Sergeant Mooney just went up and
- secured the knife and set it on the ground.
- Q Okay. Just took it away from him --

- 1 A Yes.
- 2 Q -- basically? Okay. Was he moving at all
- 3 at that point?
- 4 A He was not moving.
- 5 Q Okay. Did you believe he was deceased?
- 6 A I believed that he was dying. He -- I could
- 7 still see some agonal respirations coming from him.
- 8 Q Okay. After the knife was removed from him,
- 9 what happened then?
- 10 A The involved officers stepped out of the
- 11 room. We called for medical. It was put over that we
- 12 still didn't have enough medical resources there to
- come in to treat him. They were still dealing with
- 14 the victims outside, so I just waited with him until I
- 15 was relieved.
- 16 Q Okay. And when you were relieved, what
- 17 happened at that point?
- 18 A I was placed in my patrol car and given
- 19 another officer to kind of watch me.
- 20 Q Okay. You were identified as a witness
- officer, essentially?
- 22 A That's correct.
- MR. JACKSON: Okay. All right. That's
- 24 all the questions that I have. Do you folks have
- any questions?

1	A GRAND JUROR: When Officer Rizzo deployed
2	the less lethal, was the door only partially open at
3	that point?
4	THE WITNESS: No, I believe it was fully
5	open.
6	A GRAND JUROR: And when they moved into the
7	room, did you move up towards the door frame then?
8	THE WITNESS: The yes, I did.
9	A GRAND JUROR: Okay. That's it.
10	MR. JACKSON: Okay. Any other questions? I
11	don't see any.
12	Okay. Thank you very much.
13	THE WITNESS: Thank you.
14	A GRAND JUROR: Thank you.
15	THE WITNESS: Thanks.
16	MR. JACKSON: Okay. That concludes the
17	evidence for today, so we can go off the record.
18	* * *
19	(Conclusion of Grand Jury No. 3 Proceedings,
20	Volume 1, 5-31-19 at 4:59 p.m.)
21	
22	
23	
24	
25	

--000--

REPORTER'S CERTIFICATE

I certify, by signing below, that the foregoing is a correct transcript, of the audio record in the above-entitled cause, as recorded on CD and transcribed to the best of my ability and in accordance to the quality of the audio CD.

KATIE BRADFORD, CSR 90-0148

Court Reporter (503) 267-5112